







BERKELEY, CALIFORNIA

LOANED BY THE TRUSTEES OF THE

HENRY PIERCE LIBRARY

SAN FRANCISCO







# THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS

HENRY FROWDE, M.A.  
PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD  
LONDON, EDINBURGH, NEW YORK  
TORONTO AND MELBOURNE



# THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS

ARRANGED IN  
PARALLEL COLUMNS

BY  
J. M. THOMPSON

FELLOW AND DEAN OF DIVINITY, S. MARY MAGDALEN COLLEGE, OXFORD  
EXAMINING CHAPLAIN TO THE BISHOP OF GLOUCESTER

Property of  
**CBSK**  
Please return to  
Graduate Theological  
Union Library



OXFORD  
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS  
1910

BS

2560

T56

1910

gsl  
rds

OXFORD

PRINTED AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

BY HORACE HAET, M.A.

PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

#2144777



## PREFACE

MANY arrangements of the Gospels have been designed, in order to illustrate the Synoptic Problem. But I am not aware of any which attempt to do for the English version what such books as Greswell's *Harmonia Evangelica*, Rushbrooke's *Synopticon*, and Wright's valuable *Synopsis* have done for the Greek text—namely, to compare the parallel passages not merely *en masse*, but verse by verse and word by word. That is what I have tried to do in the present work.

Part I contains, in the first column, the whole of Mark, printed consecutively, and arranged in paragraphs according to its subject-matter; in the second column, the parallel passages from Matthew; in the third, the parallel passages from Luke; and in the fourth, some additional parallels and references.

Part II is printed in two columns, the first giving such parts of Matthew as have not already been printed in Part I, and the second the parallel passages from Luke, where there are such.

Part III gives in the first column such parts of Luke as have not been printed in Part I, and in the second the parallel passages from Matthew, where there are any. I have thought it better to print such passages as are common to Matthew and Luke both in Part II and in Part III, rather than to prejudge the question of priority.

Italics are used throughout for such words or verses as are peculiar to any one Gospel. It is of course less easy to carry out this plan in the English version than in the original Greek; but it is hoped that sufficient accuracy has been obtained to justify the attempt.

Quotations from the Old Testament have been printed between inverted commas, and references have been given at the foot of the page.

The text used is that of the Revised Version: the most important marginal readings (marked M) have been added as footnotes.

Three Tables of Contents have been added, which will, it is hoped, simplify the use of the synopsis, and summarize its material.

J. M. T.





## NOTE TO CONTENTS

THE object of these Tables is (i) to set out the whole Contents of the Synoptic Gospels in such a way that it may be seen at a glance which parts are independent, which related to one another, and (ii) to provide a detailed index of separate passages with their parallels.

*Table I* gives on the left-hand page the whole of Mark, section by section, and on the right-hand page the parallel passages in Matthew and Luke, together with a few other references. Passages which are doubtful parallels, or which are printed for convenience of reference only, are enclosed in brackets. In passages marked with an asterisk the order of the verses has been changed in printing.

Thus a comparison of the first and second columns on the right-hand page shows to what extent Mark has been taken over and edited by Matthew and Luke.

*Table II* gives on the left-hand page the whole of Matthew, section by section, and on the right-hand page (i) in the first column, all such passages or (parts of passages) of Matthew as have already been printed parallel to Mark in Part I: these are not printed again: references are given to the sections where they can be found: (ii) in the second column, passages of Matthew which are parallel to Luke, and which will be found printed again in Part III, in the sections to which references are given: (iii) in the third column, parallel passages from Luke, printed in the present Part II.

Thus the first column gives the parts of Matthew which are dependent upon Mark; the second and third together give a rough outline of 'Q' or its equivalents; and those passages which have no parallels under these columns represent Matthew's original contributions.

*Table III* deals with Luke in the same way as *Table II* deals with Matthew. The first column on the right-hand page gives those passages of Luke which have already been printed parallel to Mark in Part I, the second gives those which have already been printed parallel to Matthew in Part II, and the third gives those passages of Matthew which are printed parallel to Luke in the present Part III.

Thus the first column gives the parts of Luke that are dependent on Mark; the second and third together give a rough outline of 'Q' or its equivalents; and those passages which have no parallels under these columns represent Luke's original contributions.

# CONTENTS OF PART I. ST. MARK

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Mark.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
The Preface	1. 1	1
The coming of John the Baptist	2-4	2
The preaching of John the Baptist	5-8	3
 The baptism of Jesus	9-11	4
The temptation of Jesus	12-13	5
The preaching in Galilee	14-15	6
The call of the first Apostles	16-20	7
An unclean spirit cast out at Capernaum	21-28	8
Simon's wife's mother cured of a fever	29-31	9
Healing in the evening	32-34	10
Retirement before fresh preaching	35-39	11
The cleansing of a leper	40-45	12
The healing of a paralytic	2. 1-12	13
 The call of Levi	13-17	14
On fasting—(A) 'The sons of the bride-chamber'	18-20	15
(B) The patched garment	21	"
(C) The wine-skins	22	"
On the observance of the Sabbath	23-28	16
The man with a withered hand	3. 1-6	17
Many miracles of healing	7-12	18
The twelve Apostles	13-19	19
'Satan divided against Satan'	20-27	20
On the sin of blasphemy	28-30	21
Jesus' mother and brethren	31-35	22
The parable of the sower	4. 1-9	23
On the use of parables	10-12	24
Explanation of the parable of the sower	13-20	25
Five short sayings—(A)	21	26
(B)	22	"
(C)	23	"
(D)	24	"
(E)	25	"
The parable of the seed growing secretly	26-29	27
The parable of the mustard seed	30-34	28
The storm on the lake	35-41	29
The Gerasene demoniac	5. 1-20	30
Jaïrus's daughter, and the woman with an issue of blood	21-43	31
Jesus visits his own country	6. 1-6*	32
The mission of the Apostles	6 <sup>b</sup> -13	33
The death of John the Baptist	14-29	34
The feeding of the five thousand	30-44	35
Walking on the water	45-52	36
Healing at Gennesaret	53-56	37
On the tradition of the Elders	7. 1-13	38
On defilement	14-23	39
The Syro-Phoenician woman	24-30	40
The deaf man with an impediment in his speech	31-37	41
The feeding of the four thousand	8. 1-10	42



TABLE I

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Matthew.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Luke.</i>	<i>Miscellaneous parallels.</i>	<i>Page</i>
1	1. 1	1. 1-4	(John 1. 1-18)	2
2	3. 1-3*, 11. 10 (4. 17)	3. 1-6*, 7. 27	(John 1. 23, 1. 6)	2
3	3. 4-12*	3. 7-17*	Acts 13. 25 <sup>b</sup> , 1. 5, (11. 16) (John 1. 26-27)	2
4	3. 13-17, 17. 5 <sup>b</sup>	3. 21-22, 9. 35	Mark 9. 7 <sup>b</sup> (John 1. 32)	4
5	4. 1-11 (16. 23)	4. 1-13*		4
6	4. 12-17 (3. 2)	4. 14-15		6
7	4. 18-22	5. 1-11*	(John 1. 35-51)	6
8	4. 13 <sup>b</sup> , 7. 28-29, 4. 24-25	4. 31-37		8
9	8. 14-15	4. 38-39		8
10	8. 16-17	4. 40-41		10
11	4. 23, 9. 35	4. 42-44		10
12	8. 1-4	5. 12-16		10
13	9. 1-8 (12. 25)	5. 17-26 (7. 48-49, 6. 8 <sup>a</sup> , 11. 17 <sup>a</sup> )		12
14	9. 9-13, 12. 7 <sup>a</sup>	5. 27-32		12
15	9. 14-15	5. 33-35		14
"	16	36		14
"	17	37-39		14
16	12. 1-8, 9. 13	6. 1-5		14
17	12. 9-14	6. 6-11 (14. 5, 13. 15 <sup>b</sup> )		16
18	12. 15-21	6. 17-19 (5. 3, 4. 41 <sup>a</sup> )		16
19	10. 1-5 <sup>a</sup> *	6. 12-16	Acts 1. 13 <sup>b</sup>	18
20	12. 22-30, 9. 32-34	11. 14-23		18
21	12. 31-32	12. 10 (11. 18 <sup>b</sup> )		20
22	12. 46-50	8. 19-21 (11. 27-28)		20
23	13. 1-9	8. 4-8	(John 12. 24)	20
24	13. 10-15	8. 9-10	(John 12. 39-40)	22
25	13. 18-23	8. 11-15		22
26	5. 15	8. 16, 11. 33		24
"	10. 26	8. 17, 12. 2		24
"	11. 15, 13. 9, 43 <sup>b</sup>	14. 35 <sup>b</sup>	Mark 4. 9	24
"	7. 2 <sup>b</sup> , 6. 33 <sup>b</sup>	8. 18 <sup>a</sup> , 6. 38 <sup>b</sup> , 12. 31 <sup>b</sup>		24
"	13. 12, 25. 29	8. 18 <sup>b</sup> , 19. 26		24
27	(13. 24-30)			24
28	13. 31-32, 34-35	13. 18-19		26
29	8. 18, 23-27*	8. 22-25*		26
30	8. 28-34*	8. 26-39*	(Mark 1. 24 <sup>a</sup> )	26
31	9. 18-26	8. 40-56* (7. 50, 17. 19)	(Mark 6. 56, 6. 50, 10. 49, 52)	30
32	13. 53-58*	4. 16-30	(John 4. 43-45, 6. 42, 4. 44)	32
33	9. 35-38, 10. 1-15*, 4. 23	9. 1-6*, 10. 1-12*		34
34	14. 1-12	9. 7-9 (3. 18-20)	(John 3. 24)	36
35	14. 13-21, 9. 36	9. 10-17*	(John 6. 1-14)	38
36	14. 22-33		(John 6. 15-21)	40
37	14. 34-35		(John 6. 22-25)	40
38	15. 1-9*	(11. 37-41)		40
39	15. 10-20	6. 39		42
40	15. 21-28 (10. 6)			44
41	15. 29-31			44
42	15. 32-39			46

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Mark.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
Jesus refuses to give a sign	8. 11-12	43
The leaven of the Pharisees	13-21	44
A blind man at Bethsaida	22-26	45
Peter's confession of faith; and the sequel	27-33	46
On discipleship	34-38, 9. 1	47
 The Transfiguration	 9. 2-10	 48
The coming of Elijah	11-13	49
A boy with a dumb spirit	14-29	50
The second prediction of the Passion	30-32	51
On humility	33-37	52
 Of helpers who are not disciples	 38-41	 53
Of offences	42-48	54
Three sayings about salt	49-50	55
On divorce and adultery	10. 1-12	56
Blessing the little children	13-16	57
On renunciation of riches	17-31	58
The third prediction of the Passion	32-34	59
The request of James and John	35-45	60
The blind man at Jericho	46-52	61
The entry into Jerusalem	11. 1-11	62
The fig tree, and the cleansing of the temple	12-25	63
 A question about authority	 27-33	 64
The parable of the vineyard	12. 1-12	65
A question about tribute to Caesar	13-17	66
A question about the Resurrection	18-27	67
The two great commandments	28-34	68
A question about the 'Son of David'	35-37	69
Condemnation of the Scribes	38-40	70
The widow's mites	41-44	71
Eschatological Discourse—(A) Prologue	13. 1-2	72
(B) Signs of the end	3-8	"
(C) Persecution	9-13	"
(D) 'The abomination of desolation'	14-20	"
(E) False Christs	21-23	"
(F) Coming of the Son of man	24-27	"
(G) Parable of the fig tree	28-33	"
(H) Watchfulness	34-37	"
The priests' plot	14. 1-2	73
The anointing at Bethany	3-9	74
The treachery of Judas	10-11	75
The last supper	12-26	76
Prediction of St. Peter's denial	27-31	77
Gethsemane	32-42	78
The betrayal	43-52	79
The trial before Caiaphas	53-65	80
St. Peter's denial	66-72	81
The trial before Pilate	15. 1-15	82
The crucifixion	16-41	83
The burial	42-47	84
The Resurrection	16. 1-8	85
Conclusion	(9-20)	86

## TABLE I

xi

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Matthew.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Luke.</i>	<i>Miscellaneous parallels.</i>	<i>Page</i>
43	16. 1-4 <sup>a</sup> , 12. 38-40	11. 16, 29-30		46
44	16. 4 <sup>b</sup> -12	11. 53-54, 12. 1		48
45				48
46	16. 13-23, 18. 18	9. 18-22	(John 6. 66-71)	48
47	16. 24-28, 10. 38-39 (10. 32-33, 12. 39, 16. 4 <sup>a</sup> )	9. 23-27, 17. 33 (12. 8-9)		50
48	17. 1-9	9. 28-36*	(John 12. 28)	52
49	17. 10-13*		(John 1. 19-28)	52
50	17. 14-20*	9. 37-43 <sup>a</sup>		54
51	17. 22-23	9. 43 <sup>b</sup> -45		56
52	18. 1-5 <sup>a</sup> , 10. 40 (23. 11)	9. 46-48, 10. 16 (22. 24)	(John 12. 44-45, 13. 20, 14. 24, 15. 23)	56
53	10. 42	9. 49-50		56
54	18. 6-10, 5. 29-30*	17. 1-2*		58
55	5. 13	14. 34-35 <sup>a</sup>		58
56	19. 1-12*, 5. 31-32	16. 18		58
57	19. 13-15, 18. 3 <sup>b</sup> -4	18. 15-17		60
58	19. 16-30, 20. 16	18. 18-30, 13. 30		60
59	20. 17-19	18. 31-34		64
60	20. 20-28, 23. 11	22. 25-27 (12. 50 <sup>a</sup> )	(John 10. 15, 15. 13)	64
61	20. 29-34	18. 35-43 (7. 50, 17. 19)	(Mark 5. 34)	66
62	21. 1-11	19. 28-44	(John 12. 12-19)	66
63	21. 12-22*, 17. 20 <sup>b</sup> , 6. 14-16 (7. 28, 22. 33)	19. 45-48, 21. 37, 17. 5-6 (13. 6-9)	(John 2. 13-16, 14. 13, 15. 7, 16, 16. 23)	68
64	21. 23-27 (14. 5, 21. 46)	20. 1-8		70
65	21. 33-46* (22. 22)	20. 9-19		72
66	22. 15-22	20. 20-26		74
67	22. 23-33	20. 27-40		74
68	22. 34-40, 46	10. 25-28		76
69	22. 41-46	20. 41-44		76
70	23. 1-10	20. 45-47, 11. 43		78
71		21. 1-4		78
72	24. 1-2	21. 5-6	(John 8. 20)	78
„	24. 3-8	21. 7-11		78
„	24. 9-14*, 10. 17-22 (10. 30)	21. 12-19, 12. 11-12 (12. 7)		80
„	24. 15-22	21. 20-24, 17. 31-32		80
„	24. 23-28 (24. 11)	17. 20-25		82
„	24. 29-31	21. 25-28		82
„	24. 32-42, 25. 13	21. 29-36, 17. 26-30		84
„	25. 14	19. 12-13		84
73	26. 1-5	22. 1-2		84
74	26. 6-13*	(7. 36-50)	(John 12. 1-8)	86
75	26. 14-16	22. 3-6		86
76	26. 17-30	22. 7-23*, 39	(1 Cor. 11. 23-25)	88
77	26. 31-35	22. 31-34		90
78	26. 36-46	22. 39-46		90
79	26. 47-56	22. 47-53	(John 18. 1-11)	92
80	26. 57-68	22. 54-55, 67, 69-71*	(John 18. 19-24)	92
81	26. 69-75	22. 56-62	(John 18. 15-18, 25-27)	94
82	27. 1-2, 11-26	22. 66-71, 23. 1-3, 18-25*	(John 18. 23-19. 16)	96
83	27. 27-56*	23. 26, 33-49*	(John 19. 17-30)	98
84	27. 57-61	23. 50-56*	(John 19. 31-42)	102
85	28. 1-10*	24. 1-12*	(John 20. 1-18)	102
86				104



## CONTENTS OF PART II. ST. MATTHEW

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Matthew.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
The Preface	1. 1	
Genealogy	2-17	87
The Nativity	18-25	88
The Wise Men	2. 1-12	89
The flight into Egypt, and murder of the children	13-23	90
John the Baptist and his preaching	3. 1-12	
The baptism of Jesus	13-17	
The temptation	4. 1-11	
The living at Nazareth, and first preaching	12-17	
The call of the first Apostles	18-22	
The early ministry	23-25	
The Sermon on the Mount—(A) Introduction	5. 1-2	91
(B) The Beatitudes	3-12	"
(C) Witness	14-16	"
(D) Fulfilment of the Law	17-20	"
(E) The law of murder	21-26	"
(F) The law of adultery	27-32	"
(G) On swearing	33-37	"
(H) The law of retaliation	38-42	"
(I) The law of love	43-48	"
(J) Almsgiving	6. 1-4	"
(K) Prayer	5-15	"
(L) Fasting	16-18	"
(M) Treasure	19-21	"
(N) Light and darkness	22-23	"
(O) 'God and mammon'	24	"
(P) Faith in Providence	25-34	"
(Q) Against judgement	7. 1-5	"
(R) 'Pearls before swine'	6	"
(S) The answer to prayer	7-11	"
(T) The golden rule	12 (22. 40)	"
(U) The narrow gate	13-14	"
(V) False prophets	15-20 (12. 33-35)	"
(W) 'Lord, Lord'	21-23	"
(X) Final parable	24-27	"
(Y) Conclusion	28-29	"
A leper healed	8. 1-4	
The centurion's servant	5-13	92
Peter's wife's mother	14-15	
Healing in the evening	16-17	
Instances of discipleship	18-22	93
The storm on the lake	23-27	
The Gadarene demoniacs	28-34	
A man sick of the palsy	9. 1-8	
The call of Matthew	9	
Eating with publicans and sinners	10-13	
On fasting—(A) 'The sons of the bride-chamber'	14-15	
(B) The patched garment	16	
(C) The wine-skins	17	

## TABLE II

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part III.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Luke.</i>	<i>Page</i>
	1, § 1			
87			(3. 23-28)	106
88				106
89				107
90				107
	1-3*, § 2; 4-12*, § 3; (2, § 6)			
	13-17, § 4			
	1-11, § 5			
	12-17, § 6; 13 <sup>b</sup> , § 8; (17, § 2)			
	18-22, § 7			
	23, § 11; 24-25, § 8; 23, § 33			
91		1-2, § 129 (A)	6. 17-20*	108
"		3-12*, § 129 (B)	6. 20 <sup>b</sup> -23*	108
"	13, § 55; 15, § 26			108
"		18, § 174 (D)	16. 17	109
"		25-26, § 157	12. 57-59	109
"	29-30*, § 54; 31-32, § 56			109
"				109
"		39-40, 42, § 129 (D)	6. 29-30	109
"		44-48*, § 129 (D and E)	6. 27-28, 32-36	110
"				110
"	14-16, § 63	9-13, § 141	11. 1-4	110
"				111
"		19-21, § 152	12. 32-34	111
"		22-23, § 147	11. 34-36	111
"		24, § 174 (A)	16. 13	111
"	33 <sup>b</sup> , § 26	25-33, § 151	12. 22-31	111
"	2 <sup>b</sup> , § 26	1-2, § 129 (B); 35, § 129 (G)	6. 37-38, 41-42	112
"				112
"		7-11, § 143	11. 9-13	112
"		12 <sup>a</sup> , § 129 (D)	6. 31	112
"		13, § 162	13. 22-25	113
"		16-18, § 129 (H); 20, § 129 (H)	6. 43-45*	113
"		21, § 129 (I); 22-23, § 162	6. 46, 13. 26-27	113
"		24-27, § 129 (I)	6. 47-49	113
"	28-29, § 8; (28, § 63)		7. 1	114
"	1-4, § 12			
92		5-10, 13, § 130; 11-12*, § 162	7. 1-10, 13. 28-30*	114
	14-15, § 9			
	16-17, § 10			
93	13, § 29	18-22, § 135	9. 57-62	115
	23-27*, § 29			
	28-34*, § 30			
	1-8, § 13			
	9, § 14			
	10-13, § 14; 13, § 16			
	14-15, § 15 (A)			
	16, § 15 (B)			
	17, § 15 (C)			

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Matthew.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
The ruler's daughter, and the woman with an issue of blood	9. 18-26	
Two blind men	27-31	94
A dumb man	32-34	
Summary of ministry	35	
'The harvest truly is plenteous'	36-38	
The twelve Apostles	10. 1-5 <sup>a</sup>	
The charge to the Apostles—(A) Mission	5 <sup>b</sup> -15	95
(B) Sheep and wolves	16	"
(C) Persecution	17-22	"
(D) "	23	"
(E) Faith	24-33	"
(F) Sacrifice	34-37	"
(G) The Cross	38-39	"
(H) Reward	40-42, 11. 1	"
John the Baptist	11. 2-19	96
Woe to unbelieving cities	20-24	97
Three meditations—(A) 'I thank thee, O Father'	25-26	98
(B) 'All things have been delivered unto me'	27	"
(C) 'Come unto me'	28-30	"
On the Sabbath	12. 1-8	
A man with a withered hand	9-21	
A blind and dumb man	22-30	
Blasphemy	31-32	
On the importance of words	33-37	99
A sign	38-40	
'This generation'	41-42	100
'The unclean spirit'	43-45	101
Jesus' mother and brethren	46-50	
Parable of the sower	13. 1-9	
On the use of parables (i)	10-15	
'Blessed are your eyes'	16-17	102
Explanation of the parable of the sower	18-23	
Parables of the Kingdom—(A) Parable of the tares of the field	24-30	103
(B) Parable of the mustard seed	31-32	"
(C) Parable of the leaven	33	"
(D) On the use of parables (ii)	34-35	"
(E) Explanation of the tares of the field	36-43	"
(F) Parable of the treasure	44	"
(G) Parable of the pearl	45-46	"
(H) Parable of the net	47-50	"
(I) 'Things new and old'	51-52	"
Jesus in his own country	53-58	
Death of John the Baptist	14. 1-12	
The feeding of the five thousand	13-21	
Walking on the water	22-33	
Ministry in Gennesaret	34-36	
The tradition of the elders	15. 1-9	
On defilement	10-20	
The Canaanitish woman	21-28	
Ministry at lake of Galilee	29-31	



## TABLE II

xv

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part III.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Luke.</i>	<i>Page</i>
	18-26, § 31			
94	32-34, § 20			115
	35, § 11; 35, § 33			
	36-38, § 33; 36, § 35			
	1-5 <sup>a</sup> *, § 19; 1, 5 <sup>a</sup> , § 33			
95	5 <sup>b</sup> -15*, § 33; (6, § 40)			
"			10. 3	115
"	17-22, § 72 (c)			
"				115
"	(32-33, § 47); 26, § 26; (30, § 72 (c))	24-25, § 129 (F); 27-33, § 149 (B-E)	6. 40, 12. 3-9	115
"		34-36, § 155; 37, § 168	12. 51-53, 14. 25-27	116
"	38-39, § 47			
"	40, § 52; 42, § 53	40, § 136		116
96	10, § 2; 15, § 26	2-11, 16-19, § 132; 12-13*, § 174 (c)	7. 18-35, 16. 16*	117
97		21-24*, § 136	10. 13-15	118
98		25-26, § 138 (A)	10. 21	118
"		27, § 138 (B)	10. 22	118
"				118
	1-8, § 16; 7 <sup>a</sup> , § 14			
	9-14, § 17; 15-21, § 18			
	22-30, § 20; (25, § 13)			
	31-32, § 21			
99		33-35*, § 129 (H)		118
	38-40, § 43; (39, § 47)			
100		41-42*, § 146	11. 31-32*	119
101		43-45, § 144	11. 24-26	119
	46-50, § 22			
	1-9, § 23; 9, § 26			
	10-15, § 24; 12, § 26			
102		16-17, § 138 (c)	10. 23-24	119
	18-23, § 25			
103	(24-30, § 27)			119
"	31-32, § 28			
"		33, § 161	13. 20-21	120
"	34-35, § 28			
"	43 <sup>b</sup> , § 26			120
"				120
"				120
"				120
"				120
	53-58*, § 32			
	1-12, § 34; (5, § 64)			
	13-21, § 35			
	22-33, § 36			
	34-36, § 37			
	1-9*, § 38			
	10-20, § 39	14, § 129 (F)		
	21-28, § 40			
	29-31, § 41			

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Matthew.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
The feeding of the four thousand	15. 32-9	
'Signs of the times'	16. 1-4	104
'The leaven of the Pharisees'	5-12	
St. Peter's Confession and the sequel—(A) The confession	13-16	
(B) The commission	17-20	
(C) 'Get thee behind me'	21-23	
On self-sacrifice	24-26	
The coming of the Son of Man	27-28	
The Transfiguration	17. 1-8	
The coming of Elijah	9-13	
A demoniac boy	14-20	
Second prediction of the Passion	22-23	
The coin in the fish's mouth	24-27	105
On offences against children	18. 1-10	
The lost sheep	12-14	106
Ecclesiastical sayings—(A) Discipline	15-17	107
(B) Forgiveness	18	"
(C) Common Prayer	19-20	"
The unmerciful servant	21-25	108
Jesus comes into Judaea	19. 1-2	
On marriage and divorce	3-12	
Blessing little children	13-15	
'One that had great possessions'	16-22	
The surrender of riches	23-30	
Parable of the labourers in the vineyard	20. 1-16	109
Third prediction of the Passion	17-19	
The request of James and John	20-28	
Two blind men at Jericho	29-34	
The entry into Jerusalem	21. 1-11	
Cleansing the temple	12-17	
The withering of the fig tree	18-22	
A question about authority	23-27	
Parable of the two sons	28-32	110
Parable of the vineyard	33-41	
'The head of the Corner'	42-46	
Parable of the marriage feast	22. 1-14	111
A question about tribute to Caesar	15-22	
A question about the Resurrection	23-33	
The two great commandments	34-40	
'David's son'	41-46	
Woe to Scribes and Pharisees—(A) Hypocrisy	23. 1-10	112
(B) Humility	11-12	"
(C) Shutting the kingdom of heaven	13	"
(D) Proselytism	15	"
(E) Swearing	16-22	"
(F) Tithe	23-24	"
(G) Cup and platter	25-26	"
(H) Whited sepulchres	27-28	"
(I) Persecution	29-36	"
(J) 'O Jerusalem, Jerusalem'	37-39	"
Eschatological Discourse—(A) Introduction	24. 1-2	
(B)	3-14	

TABLE II

xvii

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part III.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Luke.</i>	<i>Page</i>
	32-39, § 42			
104	1-4 <sup>a</sup> , § 43; 4 <sup>b</sup> , § 44; (4 <sup>a</sup> , § 47)	1-3, § 156	12. 54-56	120
	5-12, § 44			
	13-16, § 46 (A)			
	17-20, § 46 (A)			
	21-23, § 46 (B); (23, § 5)			
	24-26, § 47			
	27-28, § 47			
	1-8, § 48; 5 <sup>b</sup> , § 4			
	9, § 48; 10-13*, § 49			
	14-20*, § 50; 20 <sup>b</sup> , § 63			
	22-23, § 51			
105				121
	1-5, § 52; 6-10, § 54; 3 <sup>b</sup> -4, § 57			
106		12-13, § 170	15. 1-7	121
107		15, § 176	17. 8	121
„	18, § 46			121
„				121
108		21, § 176	17. 4	122
	1-2, § 56			
	3-12*, § 56			
	13-15, § 57			
	16-22, § 58			
	23-30, § 58	28, § 184		
109	16, § 58			122
	17-19, § 59			
	20-28, § 60			
	29-34, § 61			
	1-11, § 62			
	12-17, § 63			
	18-22*, § 63			
	23-27, § 64			
110				123
	33-41, § 65			
	42-46*, § 65; (46, § 64)			
111		1-14, § 167	14. 15-24	123
	15-22, § 66; (22, § 65)			
	23-33, § 67; (33, § 63)			
	34-40, § 68			
	41-46, § 69; 46, § 68			
112	1-10, § 70	6-7, § 148 (c)		
„	11, § 60; (11, § 52)			124
„		13, § 148 (a)	11. 52	124
„				124
„				124
„		23, § 148 (B)	11. 42	124
„		25-26, § 148 (A)	11. 37-41	124
„		27-28, § 148 (D)	11. 44	124
„		29-36, § 148 (F)	11. 45-51	125
„		37-39, § 164	13. 34-35	125
	1-2, § 72 (A)			
	3-8, § 72 (B); 9-14*, § 72 (C);			
	(11, § 72 (E))			



<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Matthew.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
Eschatological Discourse—(c)	24. 15-28	
(d)	29-31	
(e) The fig tree	32-33	
(f) The time of the end	34-36	
(g) The days of Noah	37-39	
(h) 'One taken and one left'	40-41	
(i) 'Watch'	42	
(j) Readiness for Christ's coming	43-51	113
Parable of the ten virgins	25. 1-13	114
Parable of the talents	14-30	115
A parable of judgement	31-46	116
Fourth prediction of the Passion	26. 1-2	
The priests' plot	3-5	
The anointing at Bethany	6-13	
The treachery of Judas	14-16	
The Last Supper—(A) The preparation	17-19	
(B) Prediction of the betrayal	20-25	
(c) Institution of the Eucharist	26-30	
Prediction of Peter's denial	31-35	
Gethsemane	36-46	
The betrayal	47-56	
The trial before Caiaphas	57-68	
Peter's denial	69-75	
Jesus taken before Pilate	27. 1-2	
The death of Judas	3-10	117
The trial before Pilate	11-26	
The mocking and scourging	27-31	
The Crucifixion—(A) Golgotha	32-38	
(B) Behaviour of the crowd	39-44	
(c) Last hours	45-50	
(d) Portents	51-53	
(e) The centurion, and the women	54-56	
The burial	57-61	
The guard (i)	62-66	118
The Resurrection—(A) At the tomb	28. 1-8	
(B) The first appearance	9-10	
The guard (ii)	11-15	119
Conclusion	16-20	120

## TABLE II

xix

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part III.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Luke.</i>	<i>Page</i>
	15-22, § 72 (D); 23-28, § 72 (E)			
	29-31, § 72 (F)			
	32-33, § 72 (G)			
	34-36, § 72 (G)			
	37-39, § 72 (G)			
	40-41, § 72 (G)			
	42, § 72 (G)			
113		43-51, § 154	12. 39-48	125
114	13, § 72 (G)		(12. 35-38)	126
115	14, § 72 (H); 29, § 26	14-30, § 183	19. 11-27	126
116				127
	1-2, § 73			
	3-5, § 73			
	6-13*, § 74			
	14-16, § 75			
	17-19, § 76			
	20-25, § 76			
	26-30, § 76			
	31-35, § 77			
	36-46, § 78			
	47-56, § 79			
	57-68, § 80			
	69-75, § 81			
	1-2, § 82			
117				128
	11-26, § 82			
	27-31*, § 83			
	32-38, § 83			
	39-44, § 83			
	45-50, § 83			
	51-53, § 83			
	54-56*, § 83			
	57-61, § 84			
118				128
	1-8*, § 85			
	9-10, § 85			
119				129
120				129

# CONTENTS OF PART III. ST. LUKE

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Luke.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
The Preface	1. 1-4	
The promise of the birth of John the Baptist	5-25	121
The Annunciation	26-38	122
The Visitation	39-56	123
The birth of John the Baptist	57-80	124
The Nativity	2. 1-20	125
The Circumcision and Presentation	21-40	126
Jesus and the Doctors in the Temple	41-52	127
John the Baptist, and his preaching	3. 1-17	
Imprisonment of John the Baptist	18-20	
The Baptism	21-22	
Genealogy	23-38	128
The Temptation	4. 1-13	
The ministry in Galilee (i)	14-15	
The visit to Nazareth	16-30	
A man with an unclean spirit at Capernaum	31-37	
Simon's wife's mother	38-39	
Healing in the evening	40-41	
The ministry in Galilee (ii)	42-44	
The call of the first apostles	5. 1-11	
A leper cleansed	12-16	
A palsied man healed	17-26	
The call of Levi	27-28	
Eating with publicans and sinners	29-32	
On fasting	33-39	
On the Sabbath	6. 1-5	
A man with a withered hand	6-11	
The twelve Apostles	12-16	
The Sermon on the Plain—(A) Introduction	17-19	129
(B) Beatitudes	20-23	„
(C) Woes	24-26	„
(D) Love	27-35	„
(E) Judgement (i)	36-38	„
(F) Master and disciple	39-40	„
(G) Judgement (ii)	41-42	„
(H) Good and bad	43-45	„
(I) Concluding parable	46-49	„
The centurion's servant	7. 1-10	130
The widow's son at Nain	11-17	131
John the Baptist	18-35	132
The anointing of Jesus	36-50	133
	8. 1-3 }	
The parable of the Sower	4-8	
The use of parables	9-10	
Explanation of the parable of the Sower	11-15	
Three sayings—(A) A lamp	16	
(B) 'Nothing hid'	17	
(C) 'Take heed how ye hear'	18	



# TABLE III

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part II.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Matthew.</i>	<i>Page</i>
	1-4, § 1			
121				130
122				130
123				131
124				132
125				132
126				133
127				134
	1-6*, § 2; 7-17*, § 3			
	18-20, § 34			
	21-22, § 4			
128		23-38, § 87	(1. 2-17)	134
	1-13*, § 5			
	14-15, § 6			
	16-30, § 32			
	31-37, § 8			
	38-39, § 9			
	40-41, § 10; (41 <sup>a</sup> , § 18)			
	42-44, § 11			
	1-11*, § 7; (3, § 18)			
	12-16, § 12			
	17-26, § 13			
	27-28, § 14			
	29-32, § 14			
	33-39, § 15			
	1-5, § 16			
	6-11, § 17; (8 <sup>a</sup> , § 13)			
	12-16, § 19			
129	17-19, § 18	17-19, § 91 (A and B)	5. 1-2	135
„		20-23*, § 91 (B)	5. 3-12*	135
„				136
„		27-30*, 32-36*, § 91 (H and I); 31, § 91 (T)	5. 39-40, 42, 44*	136
„	38 <sup>b</sup> , § 26 (D)	37-38, 41-42, § 91 (Q)	5. 48, 7. 1-2	136
„	39, § 39	40, § 95 (E)	10. 24-25, 15. 14	136
„			7. 3-5	137
„		43-45*, § 91 (V)	7. 16, 18, 20*, 12. 33-35*	137
„		46, § 91 (W); 47-49, § 91 (X)	7. 21, 24-27	137
130		1, § 91 (Y); 1-10, § 92	8. 5-10, 13	138
131				138
132	27, § 2; (19, § 31); (19, § 61)	18-35, § 96	11. 2-11, 16-19	139
133	(36-50, § 74); (48-49, § 13); (50, § 31); (50, § 61)			140
	4-8, § 23			
	9-10, § 24			
	11-15, § 25			
	16, § 26 (A)			
	17, § 26 (B)			
	18 <sup>a</sup> , § 26 (D); 18 <sup>b</sup> , § 26 (E)			

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Luke.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
Jesus' mother and brethren	8. 19-21	
The storm on the lake	22-25	
The Gerasene demoniac	26-39	
Jairus's daughter, and the woman with an issue of blood	40-56	
The charge to the Apostles	9. 1-6	
Herod's interest in Jesus	7-9	
The feeding of the five thousand	10-17	
The confession of St. Peter	18-22	
Sacrifice	23-25	
The coming of the Son of Man	26-27	
The Transfiguration	28-36	
The demoniac boy	37-43 <sup>a</sup>	
Second prediction of the Passion	43 <sup>b</sup> -45	
Humility	46-48	
A helper who was not a disciple	49-50	
The inhospitable Samaritans	51-56	134
Instances of discipleship	57-62	135
The charge to the seventy—(A) Introduction	10. 1	
(B) 'The harvest is plenteous'	2	
(C) Mission	3-12	
(D) Woe to unbelieving cities	13-16	136
The return of the seventy	17-20	137
Three meditations—(A) 'I thank thee, O Father'	21	138
(B) 'All things have been delivered unto me'	22	"
(C) 'Blessed are the eyes'	23-24	"
The two great commandments	25-28	
The parable of the good Samaritan	29-37	139
Martha and Mary	38-42	140
The Lord's Prayer	11. 1-4	141
The importunate friend	5-8	142
Perseverance in prayer	9-13	143
The origin of miraculous power	14-20	
'The strong man armed'	21-23	
'The unclean spirit'	24-26	144
True blessedness	27-28	145
A sign	29-30	
'This generation'	31-32	146
Light and darkness	33	
Sayings about a lamp	34-36	147
Woe to Pharisees and Lawyers—(A) Washing	37-41	148
(B) Tithe	42	"
(C) Chief seats	43	"
(D) Tombs	44	"
(E) Burdens	45-46	"
(F) Persecution	47-51	"
(G) 'Key of knowledge'	52	"
(H) Opposition of Scribes and Pharisees	53-54	"
Various sayings—(A) 'The leaven of the Pharisees'	12. 1	149
(B) Plain speech	2-3	"
(C) Whom to fear	4-5	"
(D) Providence	6-7	"
(E) Confession of Christ	8-9	"
(F) Blasphemy	10	"

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part II.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Matthew.</i>	<i>Page</i>
	19-21, § 22			
	22-25*, § 29			
	26-39*, § 30			
	40-56*, § 31			
	1-6*, § 33			
	7-9, § 34			
	10-17*, § 35			
	18-22, § 46			
	23-25, § 47			
	26-27, § 47			
	28-36*, § 48 ; 35, § 4			
	37-43 <sup>a</sup> , § 50			
	43 <sup>b</sup> -45, § 51			
	46-48, § 52			
	49-50, § 53			
134				140
135		57-62, § 93	8. 18-22	141
	1, § 33			
	2, § 33			
	3-12*, § 33	3, § 95 (B) ; 12, § 97		
136	16, § 52	13-15, § 97	11. 21-24*, 10. 40	141
137				142
138		21, § 98 (A)	11. 25-28	142
„		22, § 98 (B)	11. 27	142
„		23-24, § 102	13. 16-17	142
	25-28, § 68			
139				142
140				143
141		1-4, § 91 (K)	6. 9-13	143
142				143
143		9-13, § 91 (S)	7. 7-11	143
	14-20, § 20 ; 16, § 43 ; (17 <sup>a</sup> , § 13) ; (18 <sup>b</sup> , § 21)			
	21-23, § 20			
144		24-26, § 101	12. 43-45	144
145	(27-28, § 22)			144
	29-30, § 43			
146		31-32*, § 100	12. 41-42*	144
	33, § 26 (A)			
147		34-36, § 91 (N)	6. 22-23	144
148	(37-41, § 38)	37-41, § 112 (G)	23. 25-26	144
„		42, § 112 (F)	23. 23	145
„	43, § 70		23. 6-7	145
„		44, § 112 (H)	23. 27-28	145
„		45-46, § 112 (I)		145
„		47-51, § 112 (I)	23. 29-36	145
„		52, § 112 (C)	23. 13	145
„	53-54, § 44			145
149	1, § 44			145
„	2, § 26 (B)	3, § 95 (E)	10. 27	146
„		4-5, § 95 (E)	10. 28	146
„	(7, § 72 (C))	6-7, § 95 (E)	10. 29-31	146
„	(8-9, § 47)	8-9, § 95 (E)	10. 32-33	146
„	10, § 21			



<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Luke.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
Various sayings—(G) Inspiration	12. 11-12	149
Parable of the rich fool	13-21	150
Faith in providence	22-31	151
'Treasure in heaven'	32-34	152
Watchfulness	35-38	153
Readiness for Christ's coming	39-48	154
Religious divisions	49-53	155
'Signs of the times'	54-56	156
Reconciliation	57-59	157
The Galilaeans, and the tower of Siloam	13. 1-5	158
Parable of the fig tree	6-9	159
A woman with a spirit of infirmity	10-17	160
Parable of the mustard seed	18-19	
A saying about leaven	20-21	161
'The narrow door'	22-30	162
Christ and Herod	31-33	163
'O Jerusalem, Jerusalem'	34-35	164
A man with dropsy	14. 1-6	165
Humility and Hospitality	7-14	166
Parable of the Marriage Feast	15-24	167
Discipleship	25-27	168
Counting the cost	28-33	169
Saying about salt	34-35	
The lost sheep	15. 1-7	170
The lost coin	8-10	171
Parable of the prodigal son	11-32	172
Parable of the unjust steward	16. 1-12	173
Four sayings—(A) God and Mammon	13	174
(B) Covetousness of Pharisees	14-15	"
(C) The law and the gospel	16	"
(D) Permanence of the law	17	"
Adultery	18	
Parable of Dives and Lazarus	19-31	175
Offences against children	17. 1-2	
Forgiveness	3-4	176
Faith	5-6	
'Unprofitable servants'	7-10	177
The ten lepers	11-19	178
'The kingdom of God is within you'	20-21	
Apocalyptic sayings—(A) The days of the Son of man	22-24	
(B) The Passion	25	
(C) The days of Noah and Lot	26-30	
(D) The need of haste	31-32	
(E) Sacrifice	33	
(F) 'One taken, another left'	34-37	179
Parable of the Judge and the Widow	18. 1-8	180
Parable of the Pharisee and the Publican	9-14	181
Blessing little children	15-17	
The rich ruler	18-23	
The surrender of riches	24-27	
The reward of surrender	28-30	
Prediction of the Passion	31-34	
A blind man at Jericho	35-43	

TABLE III

xxv

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part II.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Matthew.</i>	<i>Page</i>
149	11-12, § 72 (c)			146
150				146
151	31 <sup>b</sup> , § 26 (D)	22-31, § 91 (P)	6. 25-33	146
152		32-34, § 91 (M)	6. 19-21	147
153		(35-38, § 114)		147
154		39-48, § 113	24. 43-51	147
155	(50 <sup>a</sup> , § 60)	51-53, § 95 (F)	10. 34-36	148
156		54-56, § 104	16. 1-3	148
157		57-59, § 91 (E)	5. 25-26	149
158				149
159	(6-9, § 63)			149
160	(15 <sup>b</sup> , § 17)			149
	18-19, § 28			
161		20-21, § 103 (c)	13. 33	150
162	30, § 58	22-25, § 91 (V); 26-27, § 91 (W); 28-30*, § 92	7. 13, 22-23, 8. 11-12*	150
163				151
164		34-35, § 112 (J)	23. 37-39	151
165	(5, § 17)			151
166				151
167		15-24, § 111	22. 1-14	152
168		25-26, § 95 (F)	10. 37	152
169				153
	34-35 <sup>a</sup> , § 55; 35 <sup>b</sup> , § 26 (c)			
170		1-7, § 106	18. 12-13	153
171				153
172				153
173				154
174		13, § 91 (o)	6. 24	155
„				155
„		16, § 96; 17, § 91 (D)	11. 12-13*	155
„			5. 18	155
	18, § 56			
175				155
	1-2*, § 54			
176		3, § 107 (A); 4, § 108	18. 15, 21	155
	5-6, § 63			
177				156
178				156
	20-21, § 72 (E)			
	22-24, § 72 (E)			
	25, § 72 (E)			
	26-30, § 72 (G)			
	31-32, § 72 (D)			
	33, § 47			
179				156
180				156
181				157
	15-17, § 57			
	18-23, § 58			
	24-27, § 58			
	28-30, § 58			
	31-34, § 59			
	35-43, § 61			

<i>Subject.</i>	<i>Luke.</i>	<i>Number of Section.</i>
Zacchæus	19. 1-10	182
The parable of the pounds	11-27	183
The entry into Jerusalem	28-40	
Prediction of the fall of Jerusalem	41-44	
The cleansing of the temple	45-46	
Teaching in the temple	47-48	
A question about authority	20. 1-8	
Parable of the vineyard	9-16	
'The head of the corner'	17-19	
A question about tribute to Caesar	20-26	
A question about the Resurrection	27-40	
'David's Son'	41-44	
'Beware of the Scribes'	45-47	
The widow's mites	21. 1-4	
Apocalyptic discourse—(A) Introduction	5-6	
(B) The time	7-9	
(C) Portents and persecutions	10-19	
(D) Fall of Jerusalem, and coming of Son of man	20-28	
(E) Fig tree	29-33	
(F) Watchfulness	34-36	
(G) Conclusion	37-38	
The treachery of Judas	22. 1-6	
The Last Supper—(A) Preparation	7-13	
(B) Institution of the Eucharist	14-20	
(C) Prediction of betrayal	21-23	
(D) Humility	24-27	
(E) Promise of the Kingdom	28-30	184
(F) Prediction of Peter's denial	31-34	
(G) Change of methods	35-38	185
Gethsemane	39-46	
The betrayal	47-53	
Peter's denial	54-62	
The mocking	63-65	
The trial before the Council	66-71	
The first trial before Pilate	23. 1-3	
Jesus before Herod	4-12	186
The second trial before Pilate	13-19	187
The sentence	20-25	
The Crucifixion—(A) Simon of Cyrene	26	
(B) 'Daughters of Jerusalem'	27-32	188
(C) The Crucifixion	33-34	
(D) Behaviour of the crowd	35-37	
(E) The superscription	38	
(F) The penitent thief	39-43	
(G) The death	44-46	
(H) The centurion and others	47-49	
The Burial	50-56	
The Resurrection—(A) At the tomb	24. 1-7	
(B) The women's report	8-11	
(C) Peter at the tomb	12	
The appearance on the way to Emmaus	13-35	189
An appearance to the Apostles	36-43	190
Jesus' last words	44-49	191
The Ascension	50-53	192

## TABLE III

xxvii

<i>Number of Section.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part I.</i>	<i>Passages printed in Part II.</i>	<i>Parallel passages from Matthew.</i>	<i>Page</i>
182				157
183	12-13, § 72 (H); 26, § 26 (E)	11-27*, § 115	25. 14-30*	157
	28-40, § 62			
	41-44, § 62			
	45-46, § 63			
	47-48, § 63			
	1-8, § 64			
	9-16, § 65			
	17-19, § 65			
	20-26, § 66			
	27-40, § 67			
	41-44, § 69			
	45-47, § 70			
	1-4, § 71			
	5-6, § 72 (A)			
	7-9, § 72 (B)			
	10-11, § 72 (B); 12-19, § 72 (C)			
	20-24, § 72 (D); 25-28, § 72 (E)			
	29-33, § 72 (G)			
	34-36, § 72 (G)			
	37-38, § 63			
	1-2, § 73; 3-6, § 75			
	7-13*, § 76			
	14-20*, § 76			
	21-23, § 76			
	25-27, § 60; (24, § 52)			
184			19. 28	158
	31-34, § 77			
185				159
	39-46, § 78; 39, § 76			
	47-53, § 79			
	54-55, § 80; 56-62, § 81			
	63-65, § 83			
	66-71, § 82; 67, § 80; 69-71*, § 80			
	1-3, § 82			
186				159
187	18-19, § 82			159
	20-25, § 82			
	26, § 83			
188				159
	33-34, § 83			
	35-37*, § 83			
	38, § 83			
	39-43, § 83			
	44-46*, § 83			
	47-49*, § 83			
	50-56*, § 84			
	1-7*, § 85			
	8-11, § 85			
	12, § 85			
189				160
190				160
191				161
192				161



## CORRIGENDUM

Page 71, col. 1, l. 6, after Luke **xxi**, 37 add—

<sup>38</sup> *And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear him.*

## PART I. ST. MARK

## Mark i.

<sup>1</sup> *The beginning of the gospel*  
of Jesus Christ, <sup>1</sup> the Son of God.

## Matt. i.

<sup>1</sup> *The book of the generation*  
of Jesus Christ, the son of David,  
*the son of Abraham.*

## § 2. THE COMING OF

## Mark i.

<sup>2</sup> Even as it is written

in Isaiah the prophet,  
'Behold, I send my messenger  
before thy face,  
Who shall prepare thy way';<sup>a</sup>

<sup>3</sup> 'The voice of one crying in the wilderness,  
Make ye ready the way of the Lord,  
Make his paths straight';<sup>b</sup>

## Matt. iii.

<sup>3</sup> For this is he that was spoken of

by Isaiah the prophet, saying,

'The voice of one crying in the wilderness,  
Make ye ready the way of the Lord,  
Make his paths straight.'<sup>b</sup>

<sup>1</sup> And in those days

cometh John *the Baptist*,  
preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, saying,

<sup>2</sup> Repent ye ; *for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.*

## § 3. THE PREACHING OF

## Mark i.

## Matt. iii.

<sup>5</sup> And there went out unto him  
all *the country of Judaea*,  
and *all they of Jerusalem* ;  
and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan,  
confessing their sins.

<sup>6</sup> And John *was clothed*  
with camel's hair,  
'and had a leathern girdle about his loins,'<sup>c</sup>  
and *did eat locusts and wild honey.*

<sup>5</sup> Then went out unto him  
Jerusalem, and all Judaea,  
and *all the region round about Jordan* ;  
<sup>6</sup> And they were baptized of him in the river Jordan,  
confessing their sins.

<sup>4</sup> Now John himself *had his raiment*  
of camel's hair,  
'And a leathern girdle about his loins ;'<sup>c</sup>  
and *his food was locusts and wild honey.*  
<sup>7</sup> But *when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees*  
coming to his baptism, he said unto them,  
Ye offspring of vipers,  
who warned you to flee from the wrath to come ?

<sup>8</sup> Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of repentance :

<sup>9</sup> And think not to say within yourselves,  
We have Abraham to our father :  
for I say unto you, that God is able of these <sup>9</sup>stones  
to raise up children unto Abraham.

<sup>10</sup> And even now is the axe laid unto the root of the trees :  
every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit  
is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

<sup>a</sup> Mal. iii. 1.

<sup>b</sup> Isa. xl. 3-5.

<sup>c</sup> 2 Kings i. 8.

## PREFACE.

Luke i.

Cf. John i. 1-18.

<sup>1</sup> Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to draw up a narrative concerning those matters which have been fulfilled among us, |  
<sup>2</sup> even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning  
<sup>3</sup> were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word, | it seemed good to me also, having traced the course of all things accurately from the first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent  
<sup>4</sup> Theophilus; | that thou mightest know the certainty concerning the things wherein thou wast instructed.

## JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke iii.

Matt. xi.

Luke vii.

<sup>4</sup> ... as it is written<sup>10</sup> This is he, of whom it is written,<sup>27</sup> This is he of whom it is written,

in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet,

'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,  
 Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'<sup>a</sup>

'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,  
 Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'<sup>a</sup>

Cf. John i. 23.

'The voice of one crying in the wilderness,  
 Make ye ready the way of the Lord,  
 Make his paths straight.

<sup>5</sup> Every valley shall be filled, And every mountain and hill shall be brought low; And the crooked shall become  
<sup>6</sup> straight, And the rough ways smooth; | And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.'<sup>b</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judaea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of the region of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch  
<sup>2</sup> of Abilene, | in the high-priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

Cf. Matt. iv.

<sup>3</sup> And he came into all the region round about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance unto remission of sins;

<sup>17</sup> From that time began Jesus to preach, and to say, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Cf. John i. 6.

## JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke iii.

<sup>7</sup> He said therefore to the multitudes that went out to be baptized of him,

Ye offspring of vipers,  
 who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

<sup>8</sup> Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

<sup>9</sup> And even now is the axe also laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

<sup>10</sup> And the multitudes asked him, saying, What then must we do? | And he answered and said unto them, He that hath two

M. omit the Son of God.



## Mark i.

§ 3. THE PREACHING OF  
Matt. iii.

- <sup>7</sup> *And he preached, saying,*  
There cometh after me he that is mightier than I,  
the latchet of whose shoes  
I am not worthy to *stoop down* and unloose.  
<sup>8</sup> I baptized you with water;  
but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

- <sup>11b</sup> but he that cometh after me is mightier than I,  
whose shoes  
I am not worthy to bear:  
<sup>11a</sup> I indeed baptize you with water *unto repentance*;  
<sup>11c</sup> he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:  
<sup>12</sup> whose fan is in his hand.  
and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing-floor;  
and he will gather his wheat into the garner,  
but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

## Mark i.

## § 4. THE BAPTISM

## Matt. iii.

- <sup>9</sup> And it came to pass in those days,  
that Jesus came from *Nazareth* of Galilee,  
and was baptized of John in the Jordan.  
  
<sup>10</sup> And straightway coming up out of the water,  
he saw the heavens *rent asunder*,  
and the Spirit as a dove  
descending upon him:  
<sup>11</sup> and a voice came out of the heavens,  
'Thou art my beloved Son,  
In thee I am well pleased.'<sup>a</sup>

- <sup>13</sup> Then  
cometh Jesus from Galilee  
to the Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.  
<sup>14</sup> *But John would have hindered him, saying, I have need to*  
<sup>15</sup> *be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? | But Jesus*  
*answering said unto him, suffer it now: for thus it becometh*  
*us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffereth him.*  
<sup>16</sup> And Jesus, when he was baptized went up straightway  
from the water:  
and lo, the heavens were opened <sup>1</sup> *unto him*,  
and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove,  
and coming upon him;  
<sup>17</sup> and lo, a voice out of the heavens, saying,  
'This is my beloved Son,  
in whom I am well pleased.'<sup>a</sup>

## Matt. xvii.

- <sup>5b</sup> and *behold*, a voice out of the cloud, saying,  
'This is my beloved Son,  
in whom I am well pleased;'<sup>a</sup>  
'hear ye him.'<sup>b</sup>

## Mark i.

## § 5. THE TEMPTATION

## Matt. iv.

- <sup>12</sup> And straightway the Spirit driveth him forth  
into the wilderness  
<sup>13</sup> And he was in the wilderness forty days  
tempted of Satan;  
*and he was with the wild beasts;*

- <sup>1</sup> Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit  
into the wilderness  
*to be tempted of the devil.*  
<sup>2</sup> And when he had fasted  
'forty days and forty nights,'<sup>a</sup>  
he afterward hungered.  
<sup>3</sup> And the tempter came and said unto him,  
If thou art the Son of God,  
command that these stones become bread.  
<sup>4</sup> But he answered and said, It is written,  
'Man shall not live by bread alone,  
*but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.*'<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Isa. xlii. 1; cf. Ps. ii. 7.<sup>b</sup> Deut. xviii. 15.<sup>c</sup> Deut. viii. 2.<sup>d</sup> Deut. ix. 9; 1 Kings xix. 8.<sup>e</sup> Deut. viii. 3.

JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

Luke iii.

- coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that  
<sup>12</sup> hath food, let him do likewise. | And there came also publicans  
 to be baptized, and they said unto him, Master, what must we  
<sup>13</sup> do? | And he said unto them, Extort no more than that  
<sup>14</sup> which is appointed you. | And soldiers also asked him, saying,  
 And we, what must we do? And he said unto them, Do  
 violence to no man, neither exact anything wrongfully; and  
 be content with your wages.  
<sup>15</sup> And as the people were in expectation, and all men reasoned  
 in their hearts concerning John, whether haply he were the  
<sup>16a</sup> Christ; John answered,  
 saying unto them all,  
<sup>16b</sup> but there cometh he that is mightier than I,  
 the latchet of whose shoes  
 I am not worthy to unloose:  
<sup>16b</sup> I indeed baptize you with water;  
<sup>16d</sup> he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:  
<sup>17</sup> whose fan is in his hand,  
 thoroughly to cleanse his threshing-floor,  
 and to gather the wheat into his garner;  
 but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

Cf. Acts xiii.

- <sup>25b</sup> . . . But behold, there cometh one after me,  
 the shoes of whose feet I am not worthy to unloose.

Cf. Acts i.

- <sup>5</sup> for John indeed baptized with water;  
 but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many  
 days hence. [= Acts xi. 16.]

Cf. John i. 26-27.

## OF JESUS.

Luke iii.

- <sup>21</sup> Now it came to pass, when all the people were baptized,  
 that, Jesus also

having been baptized, and praying,

- the heaven was opened,  
<sup>22</sup> and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily form, as a dove,  
 upon him,  
 and a voice came out of heaven,  
 'Thou art my beloved Son;  
 in thee I am well pleased.' <sup>a</sup>

Cf. John i. 32

Luke ix.

- <sup>35</sup> And a voice came out of the cloud, saying,  
 'This is my <sup>2</sup> Son,' <sup>a</sup> my chosen:  
 'hear ye him.' <sup>b</sup>

Mark ix.

- <sup>7b</sup> and there came a voice out of the cloud,  
 'This is my beloved Son': <sup>a</sup>  
 'hear ye him.' <sup>b</sup>

## OF JESUS.

Luke iv.

- <sup>1</sup> And Jesus full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan, and 'was led' by the Spirit  
 'in the wilderness' <sup>c</sup>  
 during forty days,  
 being tempted of the devil.  
<sup>2</sup> And he did eat nothing in those days:  
 and when they were completed, he hungered.  
<sup>3</sup> And the devil said unto him,  
 If thou art the Son of God,  
 command this stone that it become bread.  
<sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered unto him, It is written  
 'Man shall not live by bread alone.' <sup>e</sup>

<sup>1</sup> M. omit unto him.<sup>2</sup> M. add beloved.

## § 5. THE TEMPTATION

## Mark i.

and the angels ministered unto him.

## Mark i.

- <sup>14</sup> Now after that John was delivered up,  
Jesus came into Galilee

preaching the gospel of God, and saying,  
<sup>15</sup> *The time is fulfilled,*  
and the kingdom of God is at hand :  
repent ye, and believe in the gospel.

## Mark i.

- <sup>16</sup> And passing along by the sea of Galilee,  
he saw Simon  
and Andrew the brother of Simon

## Matt. iv.

- <sup>5</sup> Then the devil taketh him into the holy city ;  
and he set him on the pinnacle of the temple,  
<sup>6</sup> and saith unto him, If thou art the Son of God,  
cast thyself down ; for it is written,  
'He shall give his angels charge concerning thee :  
And on their hands they shall bear thee up,  
Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.' <sup>a</sup>  
<sup>7</sup> Jesus said unto him, *Again* it is written,  
'Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.' <sup>b</sup>  
<sup>8</sup> Again, the devil taketh him unto an exceedingly high mountain,  
and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world,  
and the glory of them ;  
<sup>9</sup> And he said unto him, All these things will I give thee,  
if thou wilt fall down and worship me.  
<sup>10</sup> Then saith Jesus unto him, *Get thee hence, Satan :*  
for it is written, 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,  
and him only shalt thou serve.' <sup>c</sup>  
<sup>11</sup> Then the devil leaveth him ;  
and behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

## § 6. THE PREACHING

## Matt. iv.

- <sup>12</sup> Now when he heard that John was delivered up,  
he withdrew into Galilee ;  
<sup>13</sup> and leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum,  
which is by the sea, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali :  
<sup>14</sup> that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the  
prophet, saying,  
<sup>15</sup> 'The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,  
Toward the sea, beyond Jordan,  
Galilee of the Gentiles,  
<sup>16</sup> The people which sat in darkness  
Saw a great light,  
And to them which sat in the region and shadow of death,  
To them did light spring up.' <sup>d</sup>  
<sup>17</sup> From that time began Jesus to preach, and to say,  
Repent ye ;  
for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. }

## § 7. THE CALL OF

## Matt. iv.

- <sup>18</sup> And walking by the sea of Galilee,  
he saw two brethren, Simon who is called Peter,  
and Andrew his brother,

<sup>a</sup> Ps. xci. 11.

<sup>b</sup> Deut. vi.

<sup>c</sup> Deut. vi. 13.

<sup>d</sup> Isa. ix. 1-2.

OF JESUS (*continued*).

## Luke iv.

- And he led him to Jerusalem,  
and set him on the pinnacle of the temple,  
and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God,  
<sup>10</sup> cast thyself down from hence: for it is written,  
'He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, to guard thee':  
<sup>11</sup> and, 'On their hands they shall bear thee up,  
Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>12</sup> And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said,  
'Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.'<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>5</sup> And he led him up,  
and shewed him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.  
<sup>6</sup> And the devil said unto him, To thee will I give all this authority,  
and the glory of them: }  
for it hath been delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.  
<sup>7</sup> If thou therefore wilt worship before me, it shall all be thine.  
<sup>8</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto him,  
It is written, 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,  
and him only shalt thou serve.'<sup>c</sup>  
<sup>13</sup> And when the devil had completed every temptation he departed from him for a season.

Cf. Matt. xvi.

<sup>23</sup> . . . Get thee behind me, Satan . . .

## IN GALILEE.

## Luke iv.

- <sup>14</sup> And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit  
into Galilee:  
and a fame went out concerning him through all the region  
<sup>15</sup> round about. | And he taught in their synagogues, being glori-  
fied of all.

Cf. Matt. iii.

<sup>2</sup> Repent ye;  
for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. }

## THE FIRST APOSTLES.

## Luke v.

Cf. John i. 35-51.

- <sup>1</sup> Now it came to pass, while the multitude pressed upon him  
and heard the word of God, that he was standing by the lake  
<sup>2</sup> of Genesaret; | and he saw two boats standing by the lake:  
but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing  
<sup>3</sup> their nets. | And he entered into one of the boats, which was  
Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from the land.  
And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat.  
<sup>4</sup> And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out  
<sup>5</sup> into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. | And  
Simon answered and said, Master, we toiled all night, and  
<sup>6</sup> took nothing: but at thy word I will let down the nets. | And  
when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of  
<sup>7</sup> fishes; | and their nets were breaking; and they beckoned unto  
their partners in the other boat, that they should come and  
help them. | And they came, and filled both the boats, so that  
<sup>8</sup> they began to sink. | But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell  
down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a



## § 7. THE CALL OF THE

## Mark i.

- casting a net into the sea ;  
for they were fishers.  
17 And Jesus said unto them,  
Come ye after me,  
and I will make you *to become* fishers of men.  
18 And straightway they left the nets,  
and followed him.  
19 And going on *a little further*,  
he saw James the son of Zebedee,  
and John his brother,  
who also were in the boat  
mending the nets.  
20 And *straightway* he called them :  
and they left their father Zebedee in the boat  
*with the hired servants*,  
and went after him.

## Mark i.

- 21 And they go into Capernaum ;  
  
and *straightway* on the sabbath day  
he *entered into the synagogue* and taught.  
22 And they were astonished at his teaching :  
for he taught them as having authority,  
and not as the scribes.  
23 And *straightway* there was in their synagogue  
a man with an unclean spirit ;  
24 And he cried out, saying,  
What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth ?  
art thou come to destroy us ?  
I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.  
25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying,  
Hold thy peace, and come out of him.  
26 And the *unclean spirit*, *tearing him*  
and crying with a loud voice,  
came out of him.  
27 And they were all amazed,  
insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying,  
What is this ? *a new teaching !*  
with authority he commandeth *even* the unclean spirits,  
and they *obey him*.  
28 And the report of him went out *straightway* everywhere  
into all the region of *Galilee* round about.

## Mark i.

- 29 And *straightway*, when they were come out of the synagogue,  
they came into the house of Simon and Andrew,  
*with James and John*.  
30 Now Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever ;  
and *straightway* they tell him of her :  
and he came and *took her by the hand*, and raised her up ;  
and the fever left her,  
and she ministered unto them

## Matt. iv.

- casting a net into the sea ;  
for they were fishers.  
19 And he saith unto them,  
Come ye after me,  
and I will make you fishers of men.  
20 And they straightway left the nets,  
and followed him.  
21 And going on *from thence*  
he saw *other two brethren*, James the son of Zebedee,  
and John his brother,  
in the boat *with Zebedee their father*,  
mending their nets ;  
and he called them.  
22 And they *straightway* left the boat and their father,  
  
and followed him.

## § 8. AN UNCLEAN SPIRIT CAST

## § 9. SIMON'S WIFE'S MOTHER

## Matt. viii.

- 14 And when Jesus was come into *Peter's* house,  
  
he saw his wife's mother lying sick of a fever.  
15 And he touched her hand,  
and the fever left her ;  
and she arose, and ministered unto him.

**FIRST APOSTLES** (*continued*).**Luke v.**

- <sup>9</sup> *sinful man, O Lord. | For he was amazed, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken ;*  
<sup>10b</sup> *And Jesus said unto Simon,*  
*Fear not ;*  
*from henceforth thou shall catch men.*  
<sup>11</sup> *And when they had brought their boats to land, they left all, and followed him.*  
<sup>10a</sup> *and so were also James and John, sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon.*

**OUT AT CAPERNAUM.****Luke iv.**

- <sup>31</sup> *And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee.*  
*And he was teaching them on the sabbath day :*  
<sup>32</sup> *and they were astonished at his teaching ;*  
*for his word was with authority.*  
<sup>33</sup> *And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean devil ;*  
*and he cried out with a loud voice,*  
<sup>34</sup> *Ah ! what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth ?*  
*art thou come to destroy us ?*  
*I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.*  
<sup>35</sup> *And Jesus rebuked him, saying,*  
*Hold thy peace, and come out of him.*  
*And when the devil had thrown him down in the midst,*  
<sup>33b</sup> *... and he cried out with a loud voice ... ]*  
*he came out of him, having done him no hurt.*  
<sup>36</sup> *And amazement came upon all,*  
*and they spake together, one with another, saying,*  
*What is this word ?*  
*for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits,*  
*and they come out.*  
<sup>37</sup> *And there went forth a rumour concerning him*  
*into every place of the region round about.*

**Matt. iv.**

- <sup>13b</sup> *... he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is by the sea, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali ...*  
**Matt. vii.**  
<sup>28</sup> *And it came to pass, when Jesus ended these words,*  
*the multitudes were astonished at his teaching :*  
<sup>29</sup> *for he taught them as one having authority,*  
*and not as their scribes.*

**Matt. iv.**

- <sup>24</sup> *And the report of him went forth*  
*into all Syria : ...*  
*and they brought unto him all that were sick, holden with divers diseases and torments, possessed with devils, and*  
<sup>25</sup> *epileptic, and palsied ; and he healed them. | And there followed him great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judaea and from beyond Jordan.*

**CURED OF A FEVER.****Luke iv.**

- <sup>38</sup> *And he rose up from the synagogue,*  
*and entered into the house of Simon.*  
*And Simon's wife's mother was holden with a great fever ;*  
*and they besought him for her.*  
<sup>39</sup> *And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever ;*  
*and it left her :*  
*and immediately she rose up and ministered unto them.*

## § 10. HEALING IN

## Mark i.

- <sup>32</sup> And at even, when the sun *did* set,  
they brought unto him all that were sick,  
and them that were possessed with devils.  
<sup>33</sup> And all the city was gathered together at the door.  
<sup>34</sup> And he healed many that were sick with divers diseases,  
and cast out many devils;

and he suffered not the devils to speak,  
because they knew him <sup>1</sup>.

## Matt. viii.

- <sup>16</sup> And when even was come,  
they brought unto him  
many possessed with devils :  
and he cast out the spirits with a word,  
and healed all that were sick :

<sup>17</sup> that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying, 'Himself took our infirmities, and bare our diseases.' <sup>a</sup>

## § 11. RETIREMENT BEFORE

## Mark i.

- <sup>35</sup> And in the morning, a great while before day,  
he rose up and went out,  
and departed into a desert place,  
and there prayed.  
<sup>36</sup> And Simon and they that were with him  
<sup>37</sup> followed after him; and they found him,  
and say unto him, All are seeking thee.  
<sup>38</sup> And he saith unto them,  
Let us go elsewhere into the next towns,  
that I may preach there also;  
for to this end came I forth.  
<sup>39</sup> And he went into their synagogues  
throughout all Galilee,  
preaching, and casting out devils.

## Matt. iv.

- <sup>23</sup> And Jesus went about in all Galilee,  
teaching in their synagogues,  
and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,  
and healing all manner of disease  
and all manner of sickness among the people.

## § 12. THE CLEANSING

## Mark i.

- <sup>40</sup> And there cometh to him a leper,  
beseeching him, <sup>2</sup> and kneeling down to him,  
and saying unto him,  
If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.  
<sup>41</sup> And being moved with compassion,  
he stretched forth his hand, and touched him,  
and saith unto him, I will; be thou made clean.  
<sup>42</sup> And straightway the leprosy departed from him,  
and he was made clean.  
<sup>43</sup> And he strictly charged <sup>b</sup> him,  
and straightway sent him out,  
<sup>44</sup> and saith unto him,  
See thou say nothing to any man :  
but go thy way, 'shew thyself to the priest,' <sup>c</sup>  
and offer for thy cleansing  
the things which Moses commanded,  
for a testimony unto them.  
<sup>45</sup> But he went out, and began to publish it much,  
and to spread abroad the matter,  
insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into a city,  
but was without in desert places :  
and they came to him from every quarter.

## Matt. viii.

- <sup>1</sup> And when he was come down from the mountain, great  
multitudes followed him.  
<sup>2</sup> And behold, there came to him a leper  
and worshipped him,  
saying,  
Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.  
<sup>3</sup> And  
he stretched forth his hand, and touched him,  
saying, I will; be thou made clean.  
And straightway his leprosy  
was cleansed.  
<sup>4</sup> And Jesus  
saith unto him,  
See thou tell no man ;  
but go thy way, 'shew thyself to the priest,' <sup>c</sup>  
and offer  
the gift that Moses commanded,  
for a testimony unto them.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. liii. 4.

<sup>b</sup> ἐμβριμῶμενος, Mark : παρήγγειλεν, Luke.

<sup>c</sup> Lev. xiii. 49.

## THE EVENING.

## Luke iv.

<sup>40</sup> And when the sun *was setting*,  
all they that had any sick *with divers diseases* brought them unto him ;

*and he laid his hands on every one of them,*  
and healed them. [ <sup>34</sup> . . . with divers diseases . . . ]  
<sup>41</sup> And devils also *came out from many*,  
*crying out, and saying, Thou art the Son of God.*  
And *rebuking them*, he suffered them not to speak,  
because they knew *that he was the Christ.*

## FRESH PREACHING.

## Luke iv.

<sup>42</sup> And *when it was day*,  
he came out  
and went into a desert place :

*and the multitudes*  
sought after him, and came unto him,  
and *would have stayed him, that he should not go from them.*

<sup>43</sup> But he said unto them,  
I must preach *the good tidings of the kingdom of God*  
to the *other cities* also :  
for therefore *was I sent.*

<sup>44</sup> And he was preaching  
in the synagogues of Galilee.  
[ <sup>43</sup> . . . preach the good tidings of the kingdom of God . . . ]

## Matt. ix.

<sup>35</sup> And Jesus went about *all the cities and the villages*,  
teaching in their synagogues,  
and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,  
*and healing all manner of disease*  
*and all manner of sickness.*

## OF A LEPER.

## Luke v.

<sup>12</sup> And it came to pass, *while he was in one of the cities*,

behold, a man *full of leprosy* :  
and *when he saw Jesus*, he fell on his face, and besought him,  
saying,  
Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

<sup>13</sup> And  
he stretched forth his hand, and touched him,  
saying, I will ; be thou made clean.  
And straightway the leprosy departed from him.

<sup>14</sup> And he *charged* <sup>b</sup> him

to tell no man :  
but go thy way, and 'shew thyself to the priest,' <sup>c</sup>  
and offer for thy cleansing,  
*according as Moses commanded*,  
for a testimony unto them.

<sup>15</sup> But *so much the more*  
*went abroad the report concerning him* :  
and great multitudes came together  
*to hear, and to be healed of their infirmities.* }

<sup>16</sup> But he *withdrew himself* into the deserts,  
and *prayed.*

<sup>1</sup> M. add to be Christ.

<sup>2</sup> M. omit and kneeling down to him.



## § 13. THE HEALING

## Mark ii.

- <sup>1</sup> And when he entered again into Capernaum after some  
<sup>2</sup> days, it was noised that he was in the house. | And many  
 were gathered together, so that there was no longer room  
 for them, no, not even about the door: and he spake the  
 word unto them.  
<sup>3</sup> And they come, bringing unto him  
 a man sick of the palsy, borne of four.  
<sup>4</sup> And when they could not <sup>1</sup> come nigh unto him  
 for the crowd,  
 they uncovered the roof where he was:  
 and when they had broken it up,  
 they let down the bed<sup>a</sup> whereon the sick of the palsy lay.  
<sup>5</sup> And Jesus seeing their faith  
 saith unto the sick of the palsy,  
 Son, thy sins are forgiven.  
<sup>6</sup> But there were certain of the scribes sitting there,  
 and reasoning in their hearts,  
<sup>7</sup> Why doth this man thus speak? he blasphemeth:  
 who can forgive sins but one, even God?  
<sup>8</sup> And straightway Jesus, perceiving in his spirit  
 that they so reasoned within themselves,  
 saith unto them,  
 Why reason ye these things in your hearts?  
<sup>9</sup> Whether is easier,  
 to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins are forgiven;  
 or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk?  
<sup>10</sup> But that ye may know that the Son of man  
 hath power on earth to forgive sins  
<sup>11</sup> (he saith to the sick of the palsy) | I say unto thee,  
 Arise, take up thy bed<sup>a</sup>, and go unto thy house.  
<sup>12</sup> And he arose,  
 and straightway took up the bed<sup>a</sup>,  
 and went forth before them all;  
 insomuch that they were all amazed,  
 and glorified God,  
 saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

## Mark ii.

- <sup>13</sup> And he went forth again by the sea side;  
 and all the multitude resorted unto him,  
 and he taught them.  
<sup>14</sup> And as he passed by  
 he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus  
 sitting at the place of toll,  
 and he saith unto him, Follow me.  
 And he arose and followed him.  
<sup>15</sup> And it came to pass, that he was sitting at meat in his house,  
 and many publicans and sinners  
 sat down with Jesus and his disciples:  
 for there were many, and they followed him.  
<sup>16</sup> And the scribes <sup>2</sup> of the Pharisees,  
 when they saw that he was eating with the sinners and publicans,  
 said unto his disciples,  
<sup>3</sup> He eateth <sup>4</sup> and drinketh with publicans and sinners.  
<sup>17</sup> And when Jesus heard it, he saith unto them,  
 They that are whole have no need of a physician,  
 but they that are sick:

I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

## Matt. ix.

- <sup>1</sup> And he entered into a boat, and crossed over,  
 and came into his own city.  
<sup>2</sup> And behold, they brought to him  
 a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed<sup>a</sup>:  
 and Jesus seeing their faith  
 said unto the sick of the palsy,  
 Son, be of good cheer; thy sins are forgiven.  
<sup>3</sup> And behold, certain of the scribes  
 said within themselves,  
 This man blasphemeth.  
<sup>4</sup> And Jesus <sup>5</sup> knowing  
 their thoughts [<sup>3</sup> . . . within themselves . . . ]  
 said,  
 Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?  
<sup>5</sup> For whether is easier,  
 to say, Thy sins are forgiven;  
 or to say, Arise, and walk?  
<sup>6</sup> But that ye may know that the Son of man  
 hath power on earth to forgive sins  
 (then saith he to the sick of the palsy),  
 Arise, and take up thy bed<sup>a</sup>, and go unto thy house.  
<sup>7</sup> And he arose,  
 and departed to his house.  
<sup>8</sup> But when the multitudes saw it,  
 they were afraid, and glorified God,  
 which had given such power unto men.

## § 14. THE CALL

## Matt. ix.

- <sup>9</sup> And as Jesus passed by from thence,  
 he saw a man, called Matthew,  
 sitting at the place of toll:  
 and he saith unto him, Follow me.  
 And he arose, and followed him.  
<sup>10</sup> And it came to pass, as he sat at meat in the house,  
 behold, many publicans and sinners  
 came and sat down with Jesus and his disciples.  
<sup>11</sup> And when the Pharisees  
 saw it,  
 they said unto his disciples,  
 Why eateth your Master with the publicans and sinners?  
<sup>12</sup> But when he heard it, he said,  
 They that are whole have no need of a physician,  
 but they that are sick.  
<sup>13</sup> But go ye and learn what this meaneth.  
 'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice': <sup>1</sup> <sup>b</sup>  
 for I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

<sup>a</sup> κράβαττον, Mark : κλίνη, Matt. and Luke v. 18 : κλινίδιον, Luke v. 19, 24.

<sup>b</sup> Hos. vi. 6.

## OF A PARALYTIC.

## Luke v.

- <sup>17</sup> And it came to pass on one of those days, that he was teaching; and there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every village of Galilee and Judaea and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was with him to heal.
- <sup>18</sup> And behold, men bring  
on a bed <sup>a</sup> a man that was palsied:  
and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before him.
- <sup>19</sup> And not finding by what way they might bring him in because of the multitude,  
they went up to the house-top,  
and let him down through the tiles  
with his couch <sup>a</sup> into the midst before Jesus. }
- <sup>20</sup> And seeing their faith,  
he said,  
Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.
- <sup>21</sup> And the scribes and the Pharisees [<sup>17</sup> . . . sitting by . . . ]  
began to reason, saying,  
Who is this that speaketh blasphemies?  
Who can forgive sins, but God alone?
- <sup>22</sup> But Jesus, perceiving  
their reasonings,  
answered and said unto them,  
What reason ye in your hearts?
- <sup>23</sup> Whether is easier,  
to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee;  
or to say, Arise and walk?
- <sup>24</sup> But that ye may know that the Son of man  
hath power on earth to forgive sins  
(he said unto him that was palsied) I say unto thee,  
Arise, and take up thy couch <sup>a</sup>, and go unto thy house.
- <sup>25</sup> And immediately he rose up before them, }  
and took up that whereon he lay,  
and departed to his house, glorifying God. }
- <sup>26</sup> And amazement took hold on all,  
and they glorified God; and they were filled with fear,  
saying, We have seen strange things to-day.

Cf. Luke vii.

- <sup>48</sup> And he said unto her,  
Thy sins are forgiven.
- <sup>49</sup> And they that sat at meat with him  
began to say within themselves,  
Who is this that even forgiveth sins?  
{ Matt. xii. 25. And knowing their thoughts he said unto them, . . .  
{ Luke vi. 8<sup>a</sup>. But he knew their thoughts; . . .  
{ „ xi. 17<sup>a</sup>. But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, . . .

## OF LEVI.

## Luke v.

- <sup>27</sup> And after these things he went forth,  
  
and beheld a publican, named Levi,  
sitting at the place of toll,  
and said unto him, Follow me.
- <sup>28</sup> And he forsook all, and rose up, and followed him.
- <sup>29</sup> And Levi made him a great feast in his house:  
and there was a great multitude of publicans and of others }  
that were sitting at meat with them.
- <sup>30</sup> And the Pharisees and <sup>a</sup> their scribes  
murmured against his disciples, saying,  
Why do ye eat and drink with the publicans and sinners?
- <sup>31</sup> And Jesus answering said unto them,  
They that are whole have no need of a physician;  
but they that are sick.

Matt. xii.

<sup>7a</sup> But if ye had known what this meaneth,  
I desire mercy, and not sacrifice . . . <sup>b</sup>

- <sup>32</sup> I am not come to call the righteous but sinners  
to repentance.

<sup>1</sup> M. bring him unto him.<sup>2</sup> M. and.<sup>3</sup> M. add How is it that . . . ?<sup>6</sup> M. or the scribes among them.<sup>4</sup> M. omit and drinketh.<sup>5</sup> M. seeing.

## Mark ii.

## Matt. ix.

A.

<sup>18</sup> And John's disciples *and the Pharisees were fasting* :  
and they come and say unto him,  
Why do John's disciples  
and the disciples of the Pharisees fast,  
but thy disciples fast not ?

<sup>19</sup> And Jesus said unto them,  
Can the sons of the bride-chamber fast,  
while the bridegroom is with them ?  
*as long as they have the bridegroom with them,*  
*they cannot fast.*

<sup>20</sup> But the days will come,  
when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them,  
and then will they fast in that day.

B.

<sup>21</sup> No man *seweth* a piece of undressed cloth  
on an old garment :  
else that which should fill it up taketh from it,  
*the new from the old,*  
and a worse rent is made.

C.

<sup>22</sup> And no man putteth new wine  
into old wine-skins :  
else the wine will burst the skins,  
and the wine perisheth, and the skins :  
but they put new wine into fresh wine-skins.

<sup>14</sup> Then come to him the disciples of John, }  
saying,

Why do we  
and the Pharisees fast <sup>1</sup> oft,  
but thy disciples fast not ?

<sup>15</sup> And Jesus said unto them,  
Can the sons of the bride-chamber *mourn*,  
as long as the bridegroom is with them ?

but the days will come,  
when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them,  
and then will they fast.

<sup>16</sup> And no man putteth a piece of undressed cloth  
upon an old garment ;  
for that which should fill it up taketh from the garment,  
and a worse rent is made.

<sup>17</sup> Neither do men put new wine  
into old wine-skins :  
else the skins burst,  
and the wine is spilled, and the skins perish :  
but they put new wine into fresh wine-skins,  
*and both are preserved.*

## § 16. ON THE OBSERVANCE

## Mark ii.

## Matt. xii.

<sup>23</sup> And it came to pass, that he was going  
on the sabbath day through the cornfields ;  
and his disciples began, *as they went*,  
to pluck the ears of corn.

<sup>24</sup> And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold,  
why do *they* on the sabbath day that which is not lawful ?

<sup>25</sup> And he said unto them,  
Did ye *never* read what David did,  
when he *had need*, and was an hungred,  
he, and they that were with him ?

<sup>26</sup> How he entered into the house of God  
*when Abiathar was high priest*,  
and did eat the 'shewbread,' <sup>a</sup>  
which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests,  
and gave also to them that were with him ?

<sup>27</sup> And he said unto them,  
*The sabbath was made for man,*  
*and not man for the sabbath :*

<sup>28</sup> *so that* the Son of man is lord even of the sabbath.

<sup>1</sup> *At that season* Jesus went  
on the sabbath day through the cornfields ;  
and his disciples *were an hungred*, and began  
to pluck ears of corn, and to eat.

<sup>2</sup> But the Pharisees, *when they saw it*, said unto him, Behold,  
*thy disciples* do that which it is not lawful to do upon the  
sabbath.

<sup>3</sup> But he said unto them,  
Have ye not read what David did,  
when he was an hungred,  
and they that were with him ;

<sup>4</sup> how he entered into the house of God,

and did eat the 'shewbread,' <sup>a</sup>  
which it *was* not lawful for *him* to eat, }  
*neither for them* that were with him, }  
but only for the priests ?

<sup>5</sup> *Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath day*  
*the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are guilt-*

<sup>6</sup> *less ?* | But I say unto you, that one greater than the temple  
<sup>7</sup> *is here.* | But if ye had known what this meaneth, 'I desire  
mercy, and not sacrifice,' <sup>b</sup> ye would not have condemned the  
guiltless.

<sup>8</sup> *For* the Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

<sup>a</sup> 1 Sam. xxi. 6.

<sup>b</sup> Hos. vi. 6.



## FASTING.

## Luke v.

- <sup>33</sup> And they said unto him,  
The disciples of John fast often, *and make supplications*;  
likewise also the disciples of the Pharisees;  
but thine *eat and drink*.
- <sup>34</sup> And Jesus said unto them,  
Can *ye make* the sons of the bride-chamber fast,  
while the bridegroom is with them?
- <sup>35</sup> But the days will come;  
and when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them,  
then will they fast in those days.
- <sup>36</sup> And he spake also a parable unto them;  
No man *rendeth a piece from a new garment*, and putteth it  
upon an old garment;  
else *he will rend the new*, and also the  
piece from the new *will not agree with* the old.
- <sup>37</sup> And no man putteth new wine  
into old wine-skins;  
else the new wine will burst the skins,  
and itself will be spilled, and the skins will perish.
- <sup>38</sup> But new wine must be put into fresh wine-skins.
- <sup>39</sup> And no man having drunk old wine desireth  
*new*: for he saith, *The old is good*.

## OF THE SABBATH.

## Luke vi.

- <sup>1</sup> Now it came to pass on a <sup>2</sup>sabbath,  
that he was going through the cornfields;  
and his disciples  
plucked the ears of corn, and did eat,  
*rubbing them in their hands*.
- <sup>2</sup> But certain of the Pharisees said,  
Why do ye that which it is not lawful to do on the  
sabbath day?
- <sup>3</sup> And Jesus *answering* them said,  
Have ye not read *even this*, what David did,  
when he was an hungred,  
he, and they that were with him;
- <sup>4</sup> how he entered into the house of God,  
and did *take* and eat the 'shewbread,' <sup>a</sup>  
and gave also to them that were with him; }  
which it is not lawful to eat  
save for the priests alone? }

## Matt. ix.

- <sup>13</sup> But go ye and learn what this meaneth, 'I desire mercy, and  
not sacrifice:' <sup>b</sup> for I came not to call the righteous, but  
sinners.

- <sup>5</sup> And he said unto them,

The Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

M. omit oft.

<sup>2</sup> M. add second-first.



## § 17. THE MAN WITH

## Mark iii.

- <sup>1</sup> And he entered *again* into the synagogue ;  
and there was a man there  
which had his hand withered.  
<sup>2</sup> And they watched him,  
whether he would heal him on the sabbath day ;  
that they might accuse him.
- <sup>3</sup> And he saith unto the man that had his hand withered,  
<sup>4</sup> Stand forth.
- <sup>4</sup> And he said unto them,

Is it lawful on the sabbath day  
to do good, or to do harm ?  
to save a life, or to kill ?  
*But they held their peace.*

- <sup>5</sup> And when he had looked round about on them  
*with anger, being grieved at the hardening of their heart,*  
he saith unto the man,  
Stretch forth thy hand.  
And he stretched it forth ;  
and his hand was restored.
- <sup>6</sup> And the Pharisees went out, and *straightway*  
*with the Herodians* took counsel against him,  
how they might destroy him.

## Mark iii.

- <sup>7</sup> And Jesus with his disciples  
withdrew *to the sea* :  
and a great multitude *from Galilee* followed :  
<sup>8</sup> and from Judaea, and from Jerusalem,  
and from Idumaea, and beyond Jordan,  
and about Tyre and Sidon,  
a great multitude, *hearing what great things he did,*  
came unto him.
- <sup>9</sup> And he spake to his disciples, that a little boat should wait  
on him because of the crowd, lest they should throng him :  
for he had healed many ;
- <sup>10</sup> insomuch that as many as had plagues  
pressed upon him that they might touch him.
- <sup>11</sup> And the unclean spirits,  
*whensoever they beheld him, fell down before him, and cried,*  
*saying, Thou art the Son of God.*
- <sup>12</sup> And he charged them much  
that they should not make him known.

## Matt. xii.

- <sup>9</sup> And he departed thence, and went into their synagogue :  
and behold, a man  
having a withered hand.  
<sup>10</sup> And they asked him, saying,  
*Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day ?*  
that they might accuse him.
- <sup>11</sup> And he said unto them,  
*What man shall there be of you, that shall have one sheep,*  
*and if this fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay*  
<sup>12</sup> *hold on it, and lift it out ? | How much then is a man of*  
*more value than a sheep !*  
*Wherefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath day.*

- <sup>13</sup> Then saith he to the man,  
Stretch forth thy hand.  
And he stretched it forth ;  
and it was restored *whole, as the other.*
- <sup>14</sup> But the Pharisees went out,  
and took counsel against him,  
how they might destroy him.

## § 18. MANY MIRACLES

## Matt. xii.

- <sup>15</sup> And Jesus *perceiving it*  
withdrew from thence :  
and many followed him ;

and he healed them *all,*

- <sup>16</sup> and charged them  
that they should not make him known :  
<sup>17</sup> that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the  
prophet, saying,  
<sup>18</sup> ' Behold, my servant whom I have chosen ;  
My beloved in whom my soul is well pleased :  
I will put my Spirit upon him,  
And he shall declare judgement to the Gentiles.
- <sup>19</sup> He shall not strive, nor cry aloud ;  
Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets.
- <sup>20</sup> A bruised reed shall he not break,  
And smoking flax shall he not quench,  
Till he send forth judgement unto victory.
- <sup>21</sup> And in his name shall the Gentiles hope.' <sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Isa. xlii. 1-4, xli. 8 f.

## A WITHERED HAND.

Luke vi.

- <sup>6</sup> And it came to pass on another sabbath,  
that he entered into the synagogue and taught :  
and there was a man there,  
and his right hand was withered.
- <sup>7</sup> And the scribes and the Pharisees watched him,  
whether he would heal on the sabbath ;  
that they might find how to accuse him.
- <sup>8</sup> But he knew their thoughts ;  
and he said to the man that had his hand withered,  
*Rise up, and stand forth in the midst.*  
*And he arose and stood forth.*
- <sup>9</sup> And Jesus said unto them, *I ask you,*

is it lawful on the sabbath  
to do good, or to do harm ?  
to save a life, or to destroy it ?

- <sup>10</sup> And he looked round about on them all,

and said unto him,  
Stretch forth thy hand.  
And he did so :

and his hand was restored.

- <sup>11</sup> But they were filled with madness ;  
and communed one with another  
what they might do to Jesus.

## OF HEALING.

Luke vi.

- <sup>17</sup> and he came down with them,  
and stood on a level place,  
and a great multitude of his disciples,  
and a great number of the people  
from all Judaea and Jerusalem,  
and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon,  
which came to hear him,

and to be healed of their diseases ;

- <sup>18</sup> and they that were troubled with unclean spirits were healed. }  
<sup>19</sup> And all the multitude sought to touch him : }  
for power came forth from him, and healed them all.

Cf. Luke xiv.

- <sup>5</sup> And he said unto them, Which of you shall have <sup>1</sup>an ass  
or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw  
him up on a sabbath day ?

Cf. Luke xiii.

- <sup>15b</sup> . . . Ye hypocrites, doth not each one of you on the  
sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead  
him away to watering ?

Cf. Luke v.

- <sup>3</sup> And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's,  
and asked him to put out a little from the land. And he  
sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat.

Cf. Luke iv.

- <sup>41a</sup> And devils also came out from many, crying out, and  
saying, Thou art the Son of God.

<sup>1</sup> M. a son.

## Mark iii.

- <sup>13</sup> And he goeth up into the mountain,  
and calleth unto him *whom he himself would :*  
*and they went unto him.*  
<sup>14</sup> And he appointed twelve,<sup>1</sup>  
*that they might be with him,*  
*and that he might send them forth to preach,*  
<sup>15</sup> and to have authority to cast out devils.  
<sup>16</sup> and Simon he surnamed Peter ;  
<sup>17</sup> and James the son of Zebedee,  
and John the brother of James ;  
*and them he surnamed Boanerges, which is, Sons of thunder :*  
<sup>18</sup> and Andrew,  
and Philip,  
and Bartholomew,  
and Matthew.  
and Thomas,  
and James the son of Alphaeus,  
and Thaddaeus,  
and Simon the <sup>2</sup>Cananaean,  
<sup>19</sup> and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

## Mark iii.

- <sup>20</sup> *And he cometh into a house. | And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.*  
<sup>21</sup> *And when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold on him : for they said, He is beside himself.*  
  
<sup>22</sup> And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said,  
*He hath Beelzebub, and, By the prince of the devils casteth he out the devils.*  
  
<sup>23</sup> And he called them unto him,  
and said unto them *in parables,*  
*How can Satan cast out Satan ?*  
<sup>24</sup> And if a kingdom be divided against itself,  
*that kingdom cannot stand.*  
<sup>25</sup> And if a house be divided against itself,  
*that house will not be able to stand.*  
<sup>26</sup> And if Satan hath risen up against himself,  
and is divided,  
*he cannot stand, but hath an end.*  
  
<sup>27</sup> But *no one can enter into the house of the strong man,*  
*and spoil his goods,*  
*except he first bind the strong man ;*  
*and then he will spoil his house.*

## § 19. THE TWELVE

## Matt. x.

- <sup>1a</sup> And he called unto him his *twelve* disciples,  
<sup>2a</sup> Now the names of the twelve apostles are these :  
  
<sup>5a</sup> These twelve Jesus sent forth,  
<sup>1b</sup> and gave them authority *over unclean spirits,* to cast them out,  
*and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.*  
<sup>1b</sup> The first, Simon, who is called Peter,  
and Andrew his brother ;  
James the son of Zebedee,  
and John his brother ;  
[ . . . and Andrew . . . ]  
<sup>3</sup> Philip,  
and Bartholomew ;  
Thomas, }  
and Matthew the publican ; }  
James the son of Alphaeus,  
and Thaddaeus ;  
<sup>4</sup> Simon the <sup>2</sup>Cananaean,  
and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

## § 20. ' SATAN DIVIDED

## Matt. xii.

- <sup>22</sup> Then was brought unto him  
*one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb ;*  
*and he healed him, insomuch that*  
*the dumb man spake and saw.*  
<sup>23</sup> And all the multitudes were amazed,  
and said, *Is this the son of David ?*  
<sup>24</sup> But when the Pharisees heard it, they said,  
*This man doth not cast out devils,* }  
*but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.* }  
  
<sup>25</sup> And knowing their thoughts  
he said unto them,  
  
Every kingdom divided against itself  
is brought to desolation ;  
and every city or house divided against itself  
shall not stand :  
<sup>26</sup> and if Satan casteth out Satan,  
he is divided against himself ;  
how then shall his kingdom stand ?  
  
<sup>27</sup> And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils,  
by whom do your sons cast them out ?  
therefore shall they be your judges.  
<sup>28</sup> But if I by the Spirit of God cast out devils,  
then is the kingdom of God come upon you.  
<sup>29</sup> Or how can one enter into the house of the strong man,  
and spoil his goods,  
except he first bind the strong man ?  
and then he will spoil his house.  
  
<sup>30</sup> He that is not with me is against me ;  
and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

## APOSTLES.

Luke vi.

<sup>12</sup> *And it came to pass in these days,*  
that he went out into the mountain to pray ;  
and he continued all night in prayer to God.

<sup>13</sup> *And when it was day,* he called his disciples :

and he chose from them twelve, *whom also he named apostles ;*

Cf. Acts i.

<sup>14</sup> Simon, whom he also named Peter,  
and Andrew his brother,  
and James  
and John,

<sup>13b</sup> both Peter

and John }  
and James }

[ . . . and Andrew . . . ]

and Philip  
and Bartholomew,

<sup>15</sup> and Matthew

and Thomas,  
and James the son of Alphaeus,

<sup>16</sup> and Simon *which was called the Zealot,* }  
and Judas the <sup>s</sup>son of James, }  
and Judas Iscariot, *which was the traitor ; . . .*

and Andrew,  
Philip  
and Thomas, }  
Bartholomew }  
and Matthew, }  
James the son of Alphaeus,  
and Simon the Zealot, }  
and Judas the son of James. }

## AGAINST SATAN.'

Luke xi.

Matt. ix.

<sup>14</sup> *And he was casting out*  
a devil which was dumb.  
*And it came to pass,* when the devil was gone out,  
the dumb man spake ;  
and the multitudes marvelled.

<sup>32</sup> *And as they went forth, behold, there was brought to him*  
a dumb man possessed with a devil.

<sup>34</sup> *And when the devil was cast out,*  
the dumb man spake :  
and the multitudes marvelled, saying,  
*It was never so seen in Israel.*

<sup>15</sup> But some of them said,  
By Beelzebub the prince of the devils  
casteth he out devils.

<sup>34</sup> But the Pharisees said,  
By the prince of the devils  
casteth he out devils.

<sup>16</sup> *And others, tempting him, sought of him a sign from heaven.*  
<sup>17</sup> But he, knowing their thoughts,  
said unto them,

Every kingdom divided against itself  
is brought to desolation ;  
and <sup>a</sup> a house divided against a house  
falleth.

<sup>18</sup> And if Satan also  
is divided against himself,  
how shall his kingdom stand ?  
*because ye say that I cast out devils by Beelzebub.*

<sup>19</sup> And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils,  
by whom do your sons cast them out ?  
therefore shall they be your judges.

<sup>20</sup> But if I by the finger of God cast out devils,  
then is the kingdom of God come upon you.

<sup>21</sup> When the strong man *fully armed guardeth his own court,*  
his goods are in peace ;

<sup>22</sup> *but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and over-*  
*come him, he taketh from him his whole armour wherein he*  
*trusted, and divideth his spoils.*

<sup>23</sup> He that is not with me is against me ;  
and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

<sup>1</sup> M. add whom also he named apostles.<sup>2</sup> M. or Zealot.<sup>3</sup> M. or brother.<sup>4</sup> M. or house falleth upon house.



## § 21. ON THE SIN

## Mark iii.

- <sup>28</sup> *Verily* I say unto you,  
 All their sins shall be forgiven unto *the sons of men*,  
 and their blasphemies  
*wherewith soever they shall blaspheme :*  
<sup>29</sup> but *whosoever* shall blaspheme  
 against the *Holy Spirit*  
 hath *never* forgiveness,  
*but is guilty of an eternal sin :*  
<sup>30</sup> *because they said,*  
*He hath an unclean spirit.*

## Mark iii.

- <sup>31</sup> And there come  
 his mother and his brethren ;  
 and, standing without,  
*they sent unto him, calling him.*  
<sup>32</sup> And a multitude was sitting about him ;  
 and they say unto him, Behold,  
 thy mother and thy brethren without  
 seek for thee.  
<sup>33</sup> And he answereth them, and saith,  
 Who is my mother and my brethren ?  
<sup>34</sup> And looking round on them which sat round about him,  
 he saith,  
 Behold, my mother and my brethren !  
<sup>35</sup> For whosoever shall do the will of God,  
 the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

## Mark iv.

- <sup>1</sup> And again he began to teach  
 by the sea side.  
 And there is gathered unto him a very great multitude,  
 so that he entered into a boat, and sat *in the sea ;*  
 and all the multitude *were by the sea on the land.*  
<sup>2</sup> And he taught them many things in parables,  
 and said unto them *in his teaching,*  
<sup>3</sup> *Hearken :*  
 Behold, the sower went forth to sow :  
<sup>4</sup> and it came to pass, as he sowed,  
 some seed fell by the way side,  
 and the birds came and devoured it.  
<sup>5</sup> And other fell on the rocky ground,  
 where it had not much earth ;  
 and straightway it sprang up,  
 because it had no deepness of earth :  
<sup>6</sup> and when the sun was risen, it was scorched ;  
 and because it had no root, it withered away.  
<sup>7</sup> And other fell among the thorns,  
 and the thorns grew up, and choked it,  
 and it yielded no fruit.  
<sup>8</sup> And others fell into the good ground,

## Matt. xii.

- <sup>31</sup> *Therefore* I say unto you,  
 Every sin and blasphemy  
 shall be forgiven unto men ; }  
 but the blasphemy  
 against the Spirit  
 shall not be forgiven.  
<sup>32</sup> And whosoever shall speak a word  
 against the Son of man,  
 it shall be forgiven him ;  
 but whosoever shall *speak* against the Holy Spirit,  
 it shall not be forgiven him,  
*neither in this world, nor in that which is to come.*

## § 22. JESUS' MOTHER

## Matt. xii.

- <sup>46</sup> While he was yet speaking to the multitudes,  
*behold*, his mother and his brethren  
 stood without,  
*seeking to speak to him.*  
<sup>47</sup> And one said unto him, Behold,  
 thy mother and thy brethren stand without,  
*seeking to speak to thee.*  
<sup>48</sup> But he answered and said unto him that told him,  
 Who is my mother ? and *who are* my brethren ?  
<sup>49</sup> And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples,  
 and said,  
 Behold, my mother and my brethren !  
<sup>50</sup> For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in  
*heaven,*  
 he is my brother, and sister, and mother.

## § 23. THE PARABLE

## Matt. xiii.

- <sup>1</sup> On that day Jesus went out of the house,  
 and sat by the sea side.  
<sup>2</sup> And there were gathered unto him great multitudes,  
 so that he entered into a boat, and sat ;  
 and all the multitude stood on the beach.  
<sup>3</sup> And he spake to them many things in parables,  
 saying,  
 Behold, the sower went forth to sow ;  
<sup>4</sup> and as he sowed,  
 some seeds fell by the way side,  
 and the birds came and devoured them :  
<sup>5</sup> and others fell upon the rocky places,  
 where they had not much earth :  
 and straightway they sprang up,  
 because they had no deepness of earth :  
<sup>6</sup> and when the sun was risen, they were scorched ;  
 and because they had no root, they withered away.  
<sup>7</sup> And others fell upon the thorns ;  
 and the thorns grew up, and choked them :  
<sup>8</sup> and others fell upon the good ground,



## OF BLASPHEMY.

Luke xii.

- <sup>10</sup> And every one who shall speak a word  
against the Son of man,  
it shall be forgiven him;  
but unto him that *blasphemeth* against the Holy Spirit  
it shall not be forgiven.

Cf. Luke xi.

<sup>18b</sup> . . . because ye say that I cast out devils by Beelzebub.

## AND BRETHREN.

Luke viii.

- <sup>19</sup> And there came to him  
his mother and brethren,  
  
and *they could not come to him for the crowd.*  
<sup>20</sup> And it was told him,  
Thy mother and thy brethren stand without,  
*desiring to see thee.*  
<sup>21</sup> But he answered and said unto them,

Cf. Luke xi.

- <sup>27</sup> And it came to pass, as he said these things, a certain  
woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said  
unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the  
<sup>28</sup> breasts which thou didst suck. | But he said, Yea rather,  
blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

My mother and my brethren are *these*  
*which hear the word* of God, and do it.

## OF THE SOWER.

Luke viii.

- <sup>4</sup> And when a great multitude came together,  
and they of every city resorted unto him,  
  
he spake by a parable:  
  
<sup>5</sup> The sower went forth to sow *his seed*:  
and as he sowed,  
some fell by the way side;  
and it was trodden under foot, and the birds of heaven devoured it.  
<sup>6</sup> And other fell on the rock;  
  
and as soon as it grew,  
  
it withered away, because it had no moisture.  
<sup>7</sup> And other fell amidst the thorns;  
and the thorns grew with it, and choked it.  
<sup>8</sup> And other fell into the good ground.

Cf. John xii. 24.

Cf. James i. 11.

## § 23. THE PARABLE

## Mark iv.

and yielded fruit, growing up *and increasing* ;  
and brought forth,  
thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.

<sup>9</sup> And he said,  
Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

## Mark iv.

<sup>10</sup> And when he was alone,  
they that were about him with the twelve  
asked of him the parables.

<sup>11</sup> And he said unto them,  
Unto you is given the mystery of the kingdom of God :

but unto them *that are without*,

*all things are done in parables :*

<sup>12</sup> that 'seeing they may see, *and not perceive* ;  
and hearing they may hear, and not understand ;

lest haply

they should turn again,  
and *it should be forgiven them.*' <sup>a</sup>

## Mark iv.

<sup>13</sup> And he saith unto them,  
know ye not this parable ?  
and how shall ye know all the parables ?

<sup>14</sup> The sower soweth the word.

<sup>15</sup> And these are they by the way side,  
*where the word is sown* ;  
and when they have heard,  
straightway cometh Satan,  
and taketh away the word which hath been sown in them.

<sup>16</sup> And these *in like manner* are they  
that are sown upon the rocky places,  
who, when they have heard the word,  
straightway receive it with joy ;  
<sup>17</sup> and they have no root in themselves,  
but endure for a while ;  
then, when tribulation or persecution ariseth  
because of the word, straightway they stumble.

<sup>18</sup> And *others* are they that are sown among the thorns ;  
these are they that have heard the word,

<sup>19</sup> and the cares of the world,  
and the deceitfulness of riches,  
and the lusts of other things entering in,  
choke the word, and *it becometh unfruitful.*

## Matt. xiii.

and yielded fruit,

*some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.*

<sup>9</sup> He that hath ears<sup>1</sup>, let him hear.

## § 24. ON THE USE

## Matt. xiii.

<sup>10</sup> And the disciples came, and said unto him,  
Why speakest thou unto them in parables ?

<sup>11</sup> And he answered and said unto them  
Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom  
of heaven,  
but to them  
it is not given.

<sup>12</sup> For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have  
abundance : but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken  
away even that which he hath.

<sup>13</sup> Therefore speak I to them in parables ;  
because 'seeing they see not,  
and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.'

<sup>14</sup> And unto them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith,  
'By hearing ye shall hear, and shall in no wise understand ;  
And seeing ye shall see, and shall in no wise perceive :

<sup>15</sup> For this people's heart is waxed gross,  
And their ears are dull of hearing,  
And their eyes they have closed ;  
Lest haply they should perceive with their eyes,  
And hear with their ears,  
And understand with their heart,  
And should turn again,  
And I should heal them.'

## § 25. EXPLANATION OF THE

## Matt. xiii.

<sup>18</sup> Hear then ye the parable of the sower.

<sup>19</sup> When any one heareth the word of the kingdom,  
and understandeth it not,  
then cometh the evil one,  
and snatcheth away that which hath been sown in his heart.  
This is he that was sown by the way side.

<sup>20</sup> And he  
that was sown upon the rocky places,  
that is he that heareth the word,  
and straightway with joy receiveth it ;  
<sup>21</sup> yet hath he not root in himself,  
but endureth for a while ;  
and when tribulation or persecution ariseth  
because of the word, straightway he stumbleth.

<sup>22</sup> And he that was sown among the thorns,  
this is he that heareth the word ;  
and the care of the world,  
and the deceitfulness of riches,

choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. vi. 9-10 : cf. John xii. 40 ; Acts xxviii. 26-27.

OF THE SOWER (*continued*).

Luke viii.

and grew,  
and brought forth *fruit* }  
a hundredfold.  
*As he said these things, he cried,*  
He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

## OF PARABLES.

Luke viii.

- <sup>9</sup> And his disciples asked him  
*what* this parable *might be*.  
<sup>10</sup> And he said,  
Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom  
of God:  
but to *the rest*

in parables;  
that 'seeing they may *not* see,  
and hearing they may *not* understand.' <sup>a</sup>

Cf. John xii. 39-40.

## PARABLE OF THE SOWER.

Luke viii.

- <sup>11</sup> Now the parable is *this*:  
*The seed is the word of God.*  
<sup>12</sup> And those by the way side  
are they that have heard;  
then cometh *the devil*,  
and taketh away the word from their heart,  
*that they may not believe and be saved.*  
<sup>13</sup> And those  
on the rock are they  
which, when they have heard,  
receive the word with joy;  
and these have no root,  
which for a while *believe*,  
and in time of temptation  
*fall away.*  
<sup>14</sup> And that which *fell* among the thorns,  
these are they that have heard,  
and as they go on their way they are choked with cares  
and riches  
and *pleasures of this life*,  
and bring no fruit to perfection.

<sup>1</sup> M. add to hear.

## § 25. EXPLANATION OF THE

## Mark iv.

<sup>20</sup> And those are they that were sown upon the good ground ;  
such as  
hear the word, and *accept* it,  
and bear fruit,  
thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.

## Matt. xiii.

<sup>23</sup> And *he* that was sown upon the good ground,  
this is *he* that  
heareth the word, and *understandeth* it ;  
who *verily* beareth fruit, and bringeth forth,  
*some* a hundredfold, *some* sixty, *some* thirty.

## § 26. FIVE

## Mark iv.

A.

<sup>21</sup> And he said unto them,  
Is the lamp brought  
to be put under the bushel,  
or under the bed,  
and not to be put on the stand ?

B.

<sup>22</sup> For there is nothing hid,  
save that it *should* be manifested  
neither *was* anything *made* secret,  
but that it *should* come to light.

C.

<sup>23</sup> If any man hath ears to hear,  
let him hear.

D.

<sup>24</sup> And he saith unto them,  
Take heed *what* ye hear :  
with what measure ye mete  
it shall be measured unto you :  
and *more* shall be given unto you.

E.

<sup>25</sup> For he that hath, to him shall be given :

and he that hath not,  
from him shall be taken away  
even that which he hath.

## Matt. v, vi, vii, x, xi, xiii.

v. <sup>15</sup> Neither do men light a lamp,  
and put it under the bushel,  
  
but on the stand ;  
and it shineth unto all that are in the house.  
x. <sup>26</sup> . . . for there is nothing covered,  
that shall not be revealed ;  
and hid,  
that shall not be known.

xi. <sup>15</sup> He that hath ears to hear,  
let him hear.  
xiii. <sup>9</sup> He that hath ears <sup>1</sup>,  
let him hear.  
xiii. <sup>48b</sup> He that hath ears <sup>1</sup>,  
let him hear.

vii. <sup>2b</sup> . . . and with what measure ye mete,  
it shall be measured unto you.  
vi. <sup>33b</sup> . . . and *all* these things shall be added unto you.

xiii. <sup>12</sup> For whosoever hath, to him shall be given,

and he shall have abundance :  
but whosoever hath not,  
from him shall be taken away  
even that which he hath.

## § 27. THE PARABLE OF THE

## Mark iv.

<sup>26</sup> And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should  
<sup>27</sup> cast seed upon the earth ; | and should sleep and rise night  
and day, and the seed should spring up and grow, he  
<sup>28</sup> knoweth not how. | The earth beareth fruit of herself ; first  
<sup>29</sup> the blade, then the ear, then the full corn in the ear. | But  
when the fruit is ripe, straightway he 'putteth forth the sickle,  
because the harvest is come'.<sup>a</sup>



**PARABLE OF THE SOWER** (*continued*).

Luke viii.

- <sup>15</sup> And that in the good ground,  
these are such as *in an honest and good heart,*  
having heard the word, *hold it fast,*  
and bring forth fruit *with patience.*

**SHORT SAYINGS.**

Luke viii.

- <sup>16</sup> And no man, *when he hath lighted a lamp,*  
covereth it with a *vessel,*  
or putteth it under a bed;  
but putteth it on a stand,  
*that they which enter in may see the light.*  
<sup>17</sup> For nothing is hid,  
that shall not be made manifest;  
nor anything secret,  
that shall not be known and come to light.

[<sup>8b</sup> . . . He that hath ears to hear,  
let him hear.]

- <sup>18</sup> Take heed *therefore how ye hear :*

for whosoever hath, to him shall be given ;

and whosoever hath not,  
from him shall be taken away  
even that which *he thinketh* he hath.

**SEED GROWING SECRETLY.**

Luke xi, xii, xiv.

- xi. <sup>33</sup> No man, *when he hath lighted a lamp,*  
putteth it in a *cellar,* }  
neither under the bushel, }  
but on the stand,  
*that they which enter in may see the light.*  
xii. <sup>2</sup> But there is nothing covered up,  
that shall not be revealed :  
and hid,  
that shall not be known.

xiv. <sup>35b</sup> He that hath ears to hear,  
let him hear.

Mark iv.

- <sup>9</sup> And he said, Who hath ears to hear,  
let him hear.

Luke vi, xii.

- vi. <sup>38b</sup> For with what measure ye mete  
it shall be measured to you *again.*  
xii. <sup>31b</sup> . . . and these things shall be added unto you.

Matt. xxv.

- <sup>29</sup> For unto every one that  
hath  
shall be given,  
*and he shall have abundance:*  
but from him that hath not,  
even that which he hath }  
shall be taken away. }

Luke xix.

- <sup>26</sup> I say unto you that  
unto every one that hath  
shall be given ;  
but from him that hath not,  
even that which he hath }  
shall be taken away from }  
him. }

Cf. Matt. xiii.

- <sup>24</sup> Another parable set he before them, saying, *The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his*  
<sup>25</sup> *field : | but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares*  
<sup>26</sup> *also among the wheat, and went away. | But when the blade*  
<sup>27</sup> *sprang up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares*  
<sup>28</sup> *also. | And the servants of the householder came and said*  
*unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field ?*  
*whence then hath it tares ? | And he said unto them, An*  
*enemy hath done this. And the servants say unto him, Will*  
*thou then that we go and gather them up ? | But he saith,*  
*Nay ; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the*  
<sup>30</sup> *wheat with them. | Let both grow together until the harvest :*  
*and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers,*  
*Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn*  
*them : but gather the wheat into my barn.*

<sup>1</sup> M. add to hear.

## § 28. THE PARABLE OF

## Mark iv.

- <sup>30</sup> And he said,  
*How shall we liken the kingdom of God ?  
 or in what parable shall we set it forth ?*
- <sup>31</sup> It is like a grain of mustard seed,  
 which, *when it is sown upon the earth,*  
 though it be less than all the seeds *that are upon the earth,*
- <sup>32</sup> yet when it is *sown*, groweth up,  
 and becometh greater than *all* the herbs,  
 and putteth out great branches ;  
 so that 'the birds of the heaven' can  
 'lodge' under the shadow 'thereof'.<sup>a</sup>
- <sup>33</sup> And with *many such* parables  
 spake he *the word* unto them,  
*as they were able to hear it :*
- <sup>34</sup> and without a parable spake he not unto them :  
*but privately to his own disciples  
 he expounded all things.*

## Mark iv.

- <sup>35</sup> And on that day, when even was come,  
 he saith unto them,  
 Let us go over unto the other side.
- <sup>36</sup> And leaving the multitude,  
*they take him with them, even as he was,  
 in the boat.*  
*And other boats were with him.*
- <sup>37</sup> And there ariseth a great storm of wind,  
 and the waves beat into the boat,  
 insomuch that the boat was now filling.
- <sup>38</sup> And he himself was *in the stern,*  
 asleep on the cushion :  
 and they awake him  
 and say unto him, Master,  
*carest thou not that we perish ?*
- <sup>39</sup> And he awoke, and rebuked the wind,  
 and said unto the sea, *Peace, be still.*  
*And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.*
- <sup>40</sup> And he said unto them,  
 Why are ye fearful ?  
*have ye not yet faith ?*
- <sup>41</sup> And they feared exceedingly,  
 and said one to another,  
 Who then is this,  
 that even the wind and the sea obey him ?

## Mark v.

- A. <sup>1</sup> And they came to the other side of the sea,  
 into the country of the Gerasenes.
- <sup>2</sup> And when he was come out of the boat,  
 straightway there met him  
 out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,
- <sup>3</sup> who had his dwelling in the tombs :

<sup>a</sup> Dan. iv. 12, 21 ; Ezek. xvii. 23.

## Matt. xiii.

- <sup>31</sup> Another parable set he before them, saying,  
 The kingdom of heaven
- is like unto a grain of mustard seed,  
 which a man took, and sowed in his field :
- <sup>32</sup> which indeed is less than all seeds ;  
 but when it is grown,  
 it is greater than the herbs,  
 and becometh a tree,  
 so that 'the birds of the heaven' come and  
 'lodge in the branches thereof'.<sup>a</sup>
- <sup>34</sup> All these things spake Jesus in parables  
 unto the multitudes ;
- and without a parable spake he *nothing* unto them :
- <sup>35</sup> that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet,  
 saying, 'I will open my mouth in parables ; I will utter  
 things hidden from the foundation of the world.'<sup>b</sup>

## § 29. THE STORM

## Matt. viii.

- <sup>18</sup> Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him,  
 he gave commandment  
 to depart unto the other side.
- <sup>23</sup> And when he was entered  
 into a boat, his disciples followed him.
- <sup>24</sup> And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea,  
 insomuch that the boat }  
 was covered with the waves : }  
 but he  
 was asleep.
- <sup>25</sup> And they came to him, and awoke him,  
 saying, *Save, Lord ;  
 we perish.*
- <sup>26</sup> Then he arose, and rebuked the winds  
 and the sea ;  
 and there was a great calm.
- <sup>26a</sup> And he saith unto them,  
 Why are ye fearful,  
 O ye of little faith ?
- <sup>27</sup> And the men marvelled,  
 saying,  
 What manner of man is this,  
 that even the winds and the sea obey him ?

## § 30. THE GERASENE

## Matt. viii.

- <sup>28</sup> And when he was come to the other side  
 into the country of the Gadarenes,
- there met him  
 two possessed with devils, coming forth out of the tombs  
 exceeding fierce,

<sup>b</sup> Ps. lxxviii. 2.

## THE MUSTARD SEED.

Luke xiii.

- <sup>18</sup> He said *therefore*,  
*Unto what is the kingdom of God like ?*  
*and whereunto shall I liken it ?*  
<sup>19</sup> It is like unto a grain of mustard seed,  
 which a man took, and cast into his own garden ;  
 and it grew,  
 and became a tree ; }  
 and 'the birds of the heaven  
 lodged in the branches thereof'. <sup>a</sup>

## ON THE LAKE.

Luke viii.

- <sup>22a</sup> *Now it came to pass on one of those days,*  
<sup>22c</sup> and he said unto them,  
*Let us go over unto the other side of the lake :*  
*and they launched forth.*  
<sup>22b</sup> that he entered  
 into a boat, himself and his disciples ;  
<sup>23b</sup> and there came down a storm of wind on the lake ;  
 and they were filling with water, and were in jeopardy.  
<sup>23a</sup> But as they sailed  
 he fell asleep :  
<sup>24</sup> And they came to him, and awoke him,  
 saying, Master, master,  
 we perish.  
 And he awoke, and rebuked the wind,  
 and the raging of the water :  
 and they ceased, and there was a calm.  
<sup>25</sup> And he said unto them,  
*Where is your faith ?*  
 And being afraid they marvelled,  
 saying one to another,  
 Who then is this,  
 that he commandeth even the winds and the water,  
 and they obey him ?

## DEMONIAC.

Luke viii.

- <sup>26</sup> And they arrived  
 at the country of the <sup>1</sup>Gerasenes, which is over against Galilee.  
<sup>27</sup> And when he was come forth upon the land,  
 there met him  
 a certain man out of the city, who had devils ;  
 and for a long time he had worn no clothes,  
 and abode not in any house, but in the tombs.

<sup>1</sup> M. or Gergesenes, or Gadarenes.

## § 30. THE GERASENE

## Mark v.

- and no man could *any more bind him,*  
*no, not with a chain ;*  
<sup>4</sup> *because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains,*  
*and the chains had been rent asunder by him,*  
*and the fetters broken in pieces :*  
*and no man had strength to tame him.*  
<sup>5</sup> *And always, night and day,*  
*in the tombs and in the mountains,*  
*he was crying out, and cutting himself with stones.*  
<sup>6</sup> *And when he saw Jesus from afar,*  
*he ran and worshipped him ;*  
<sup>7</sup> *and crying out with a loud voice, he saith,*  
*What have I to do with thee,*  
*Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God ?*  
*I adjure thee by God, torment me not.*  
<sup>8</sup> *For he said unto him,*  
*Come forth, thou unclean spirit, out of the man.*  
<sup>9</sup> *And he asked him, What is thy name ?*  
*And he saith unto him, My name is Legion ;*  
*for we are many.*  
<sup>10</sup> *And he besought him much*  
*that he would not send them away out of the country.*
- B.
- <sup>11</sup> *Now there was there on the mountain side*  
*a great herd of swine feeding.*  
<sup>12</sup> *And they besought him, saying,*  
*Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.*  
<sup>13</sup> *And he gave them leave.*  
*And the unclean spirits came out,*  
*and entered into the swine :*  
*and the herd rushed down the steep into the sea,*  
*in number about two thousand ;*  
*and they were choked in the sea.*
- C.
- <sup>14</sup> *And they that fed them fled,*  
*and told it in the city, and in the country.*  
*And they came to see what it was that had come to pass.*  
<sup>15</sup> *And they come to Jesus,*  
*and behold him that was possessed with devils*  
*sitting, clothed and in his right mind,*  
*even him that had the legion :*  
*and they were afraid.*  
<sup>16</sup> *And they that saw it declared unto them*  
*how it befel him that was possessed with devils,*  
*and concerning the swine.*  
<sup>17</sup> *And they began to beseech him*  
*to depart from their borders.*
- D.
- <sup>18</sup> *And as he was entering into the boat,*  
*he that had been possessed with devils*  
*besought him that he might be with him.*  
<sup>19</sup> *And he suffered him not, but saith unto him,*  
*Go to thy house unto thy friends,*  
*and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee,*  
*and how he had mercy on thee.*  
<sup>20</sup> *And he went his way, and began to publish in Decapolis*  
*how great things Jesus had done for him :*  
*and all men did marvel.*

## Matt. viii.

- so that no man could *pass by that way.*
- <sup>29</sup> *And behold, they cried out, saying,*  
*What have we to do with thee,*  
*thou Son of God ?*  
*art thou come hither to torment us before the time ?*
- <sup>30</sup> *Now there was afar off from them*  
*a herd of many swine feeding.*  
<sup>31</sup> *And the devils besought him, saying,*  
*If thou cast us out,*  
*send us away into the herd of swine.*  
<sup>32</sup> *And he said unto them, Go.*  
*And they came out,*  
*and went into the swine :*  
*and behold, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the sea,*  
*and perished in the waters.*
- <sup>33a</sup> *And they that fed them fled,*  
*and went away into the city, and told everything,*  
<sup>34a</sup> *And behold, all the city came out to meet Jesus :*  
*and when they saw him,*
- <sup>33b</sup> *and what was befallen unto them that were possessed with*  
*devils.*  
<sup>34b</sup> *they besought him*  
*that he would depart from their borders.*



DEMONIAC (*continued*).

## Luke viii.

<sup>29b</sup> For oftentimes it had seized him: and he was  
 kept under guard, and bound with chains and fetters; }  
 and breaking the bands asunder,  
 he was driven of the devil into the deserts.

<sup>28</sup> And when he saw Jesus,  
 he cried out, and fell down before him, }  
 and with a loud voice said,  
 What have I to do with thee,  
 Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God?  
 I beseech thee, torment me not.

Cf. Mark i.

<sup>24a</sup> And he cried out, saying,  
 What have we to do with thee,  
 thou Jesus of Nazareth?  
 art thou come to destroy us?

<sup>29a</sup> For he commanded  
 the unclean spirit to come out from the man.

<sup>30</sup> And Jesus asked him, What is thy name?  
 And he said, Legion;  
 for many devils were entered into him.

<sup>31</sup> And they intreated him  
 that he would not command them to depart into the abyss.

<sup>32</sup> Now there was there a herd of many swine }  
 feeding on the mountain:  
 and they intreated him

that he would give them leave to enter into them.  
 And he gave them leave.

<sup>33</sup> And the devils came out from the man,  
 and entered into the swine:  
 and the herd rushed down the steep into the lake,  
 and were choked.

<sup>34</sup> And when they that fed them saw what had come to pass, they fled,  
 and told it in the city and in the country.

<sup>35</sup> And they went out to see what had come to pass;  
 and they came to Jesus,  
 and found the man, from whom the devils were gone out,  
 sitting, clothed and in his right mind,  
 at the feet of Jesus:  
 and they were afraid.

<sup>36</sup> And they that saw it told them  
 how he that was possessed with devils was made whole.

<sup>37</sup> And all the people of the country of the <sup>1</sup>Gerasenes round about  
 asked him to depart from them;  
 for they were holden with great fear:

and he entered into a boat, and returned.

<sup>38</sup> But the man from whom the devils were gone out  
 prayed him that he might be with him:  
 but he sent him away, saying,

<sup>39</sup> Return to thy house,  
 and declare how great things God hath done for thee.

And he went his way, publishing throughout the whole city  
 how great things Jesus had done for him.

<sup>1</sup> M. or Gergesenes, or Gadarenes.

## Mark v.

- A.
- <sup>21</sup> And when Jesus *had crossed over again in the boat unto the other side, a great multitude was gathered unto him : and he was by the sea.*
- <sup>22</sup> And there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jaïrus by name ; and *seeing him, he falleth at his feet,*
- <sup>23</sup> and beseecheth him *much, saying, My little daughter is at the point of death : I pray thee, that thou come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be made whole, and live.*
- <sup>24</sup> And he went *with him ; and a great multitude followed him, and they thronged him.*
- B.
- <sup>25</sup> And a woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years,
- <sup>26</sup> and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all *that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,*
- <sup>27</sup> *having heard the things concerning Jesus, came in the crowd behind, and touched his garment.*
- <sup>28</sup> For she said, If I touch but his garments, I shall be made whole.
- <sup>29</sup> And straightway the fountain of her blood *was dried up ; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her plague.*
- <sup>30</sup> And straightway Jesus, perceiving in himself that the power proceeding from him had gone forth, turned him *about in the crowd, and said, Who touched my garments ?*
- <sup>31</sup> And his disciples said unto him, *Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me ?*
- <sup>32</sup> And he looked round about to see her *that had done this thing.*
- <sup>33</sup> But the woman *fearing and trembling, knowing what had been done to her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.*
- <sup>34</sup> And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole ; go in peace, *and be whole of thy plague.*
- C.
- <sup>35</sup> While he yet spake, *they come from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying, Thy daughter is dead : why troublest thou the Master any further ?*
- <sup>36</sup> But Jesus, <sup>1</sup> *not heeding the word spoken, saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Fear not, only believe.*
- <sup>37</sup> And he suffered no man to follow with him, save Peter, and James, and John *the brother of James.*
- <sup>38</sup> And they come to the house of the ruler of the synagogue ; and he *beholdeth a tumult, and many weeping and wailing greatly.*
- <sup>39</sup> And when he was entered in, he saith unto them, *Why make ye a tumult, and weep ? the child is not dead, but sleepeth.*
- <sup>40</sup> And they laughed him to scorn. But he, having put them all forth, taketh the father of the child and her mother

## § 31. JAÏRUS'S DAUGHTER, AND THE

## Matt. ix.

- <sup>18</sup> While he spake these things unto them,
- behold, there came a ruler,
- and worshipped him saying,  
My daughter is *even now dead :*  
but come  
and lay thy hand upon her,  
and she *shall live.*
- <sup>19</sup> And Jesus arose, *and followed him, and so did his disciples.*
- <sup>20</sup> And behold, a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years,
- came behind him,  
and touched the border of his garment :
- <sup>21</sup> for she said *within herself, If I do but touch his garment, I shall be made whole.*
- <sup>22</sup> But Jesus
- turning
- and seeing her
- said,  
Daughter, *be of good cheer ; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.*
- <sup>23</sup> And when Jesus came into the ruler's house,  
and saw the flute-players, and the crowd making a tumult,
- <sup>24</sup> he said,  
Give place :  
for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.  
And they laughed him to scorn.
- <sup>25</sup> But when the crowd was put forth,

Luke viii.

41 And behold, there came  
a man named Jairus,  
and he was a ruler of the synagogue : }  
and he fell down at Jesus' feet,  
and besought him *to come into his house ;*  
42 for he had an *only daughter, about twelve years of age,* }  
and she *lay a dying.*

and immediately the *issue* of her blood *stanch'd*.

<sup>3</sup> M. omit and they that were with him.

## § 31. JAÏRUS'S DAUGHTER, AND THE WOMAN

## Mark v.

- and them that were with him,  
and goeth in where the child was.  
<sup>41</sup> And taking the child by the hand,  
he saith unto her, *Talitha cumi*;  
*which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, Arise.*  
<sup>42</sup> And straightway the damsel rose up, and walked;  
for she was twelve years old.  
And they were amazed straightway  
with a great amazement.  
<sup>43</sup> And he charged them that no man should know this:  
And he commanded  
that something should be given her to eat.

## Mark vi.

- <sup>1</sup> And  
he went out from thence;  
and he cometh into his own country;  
and his disciples follow him.  
<sup>2</sup> And when the sabbath was come,  
he began to teach in the synagogue:

and many hearing him were astonished,

saying,  
Whence hath this man these things?  
and, *What is the wisdom that is given unto this man,*  
and *what mean such mighty works*  
*wrought by his hands?*  
<sup>3</sup> Is not this the carpenter,  
the son of Mary,  
and brother of James, and *Joses*, and Judas, and Simon?  
and are not his sisters *here* with us?

- and they were offended in him.  
<sup>4</sup> And Jesus said unto them,  
A prophet is not without honour,  
save in his own country, and *among his own kin*,  
and in his own house.  
<sup>5</sup> And he could there do no mighty work,  
*save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk,*  
*and healed them.*  
<sup>6a</sup> And he marvelled because of their unbelief.

## Matt. ix.

he entered in,  
and took her by the hand;

and the damsel arose.

- <sup>26</sup> And the fame hereof went forth  
into all that land.

## § 32. JESUS VISITS HIS

## Matt. xiii.

- <sup>53</sup> And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables,  
he departed thence.  
<sup>54a</sup> And coming into his own country

he taught them in their synagogue,

inasmuch that they were astonished,

- and said,  
<sup>56b</sup> Whence then hath this man *all* these things?  
<sup>54b</sup> Whence hath this man this wisdom,  
and these mighty works?  
<sup>55</sup> Is not this the carpenter's son? }  
*is not his mother called Mary?* }  
and his brethren, James, and *Joseph*, and Simon, and Judas?  
<sup>56a</sup> And his sisters, are they not *all* with us?

- <sup>57</sup> And they were offended in him.  
But Jesus said unto them,  
A prophet is not without honour,  
save in his own country,  
and in his own house.  
<sup>58</sup> And he did not many mighty works there

because of their unbelief.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. lxi. 1-2.

<sup>b</sup> 1 Kings xvii. 9.



WITH AN ISSUE OF BLOOD (*continued*).

Luke viii.

<sup>54b</sup> taking her by the hand,  
*called, saying,*  
*Maiden, arise.*  
<sup>55a</sup> And her spirit returned, and she rose up immediately :  
<sup>[42 . . . about twelve years of age . . .]</sup>  
<sup>56</sup> And her parents were amazed :

but he charged them to tell no man what had been done.  
<sup>55b</sup> and he commanded  
 that something be given her to eat.

## OWN COUNTRY.

Luke iv.

<sup>16</sup> And

Cf. John iv. 43-45.

he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up :  
 and he entered, as his custom was, }  
 into the synagogue on the sabbath day, }  
<sup>17</sup> and stood up to read. | And there was delivered unto him the  
*book of the prophet Isaiah. And he opened the book, and*  
*found the place where it was written,*  
<sup>18</sup> ' The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,  
*Because he anointed me to preach good tidings to the poor :*  
*He hath sent me to proclaim release to the captives,*  
*And recovering of sight to the blind,*  
*To set at liberty them that are bruised,*  
<sup>19</sup> *To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.' <sup>a</sup>*  
<sup>20</sup> And he closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant, and  
*sat down : and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened*  
<sup>21</sup> *on him. | And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this*  
*scripture been fulfilled in your ears.*  
<sup>22</sup> And all bare him witness, and wondered  
 at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth :  
 and they said,

Is not this Joseph's son ? }

Cf. John vi. 42.

<sup>23</sup> And he said unto them, Doubtless ye will say unto me this  
*parable, Physician, heal thyself : whatsoever we have heard*  
*done at Capernaum, do also here in thine own country.*  
<sup>24</sup> And he said, Verily I say unto you,  
*No prophet is acceptable*  
*in his own country.*  
<sup>25</sup> But of a truth I say unto you, There were many widows  
*in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up*  
*three years and six months, when there came a great famine*  
<sup>26</sup> *over all the land ; | and unto none of them was Elijah sent,*  
*but only ' to Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, unto a woman*  
<sup>27</sup> *that was a widow' <sup>b</sup> | And there were many lepers in Israel in*  
*the time of Elisha the prophet ; and none of them was*  
<sup>28</sup> *cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian. | And they were all*  
*filled with wrath in the synagogue, as they heard these things ; |*  
<sup>29</sup> *and they rose up, and cast him forth out of the city, and led*  
*him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built,*  
<sup>30</sup> *that they might throw him down headlong. | But he passing*  
*through the midst of them went his way.*

Cf. John iv. 44.

## § 33. THE MISSION OF

## Mark vi.

## Matt. ix, x.

A.

<sup>6b</sup> And he went round about the villages teaching.

B.

<sup>7</sup> And he called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits;

<sup>8</sup> and he charged them

that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only;  
no bread,  
no wallet,  
no money <sup>b</sup> in their purse <sup>c</sup>;  
<sup>9</sup> but to go shod with sandals:  
and, said he, put not on two coats.

C.

<sup>10</sup> And he said unto them,  
Wheresoever ye enter into a house,  
there abide until ye depart thence.

<sup>11</sup> And whatsoever place shall not receive you,  
and they hear you not,  
as ye go forth thence,  
shake off the dust that is under your feet  
for a testimony unto them.

<sup>35</sup> And Jesus went about all the cities and the villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.

<sup>36</sup> But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and scattered, 'as sheep not having a shepherd.' <sup>a</sup>

<sup>37</sup> Then saith he to his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

<sup>38</sup> Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.

x. <sup>1a</sup> And he called unto him his twelve disciples,

<sup>5a</sup> These twelve Jesus sent forth,

<sup>1b</sup> and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.

<sup>5b</sup> and charged them, saying, Go not into any way of the Gentiles, and enter not into any city of the Samaritans: | but go rather to the lost sheep of

<sup>6</sup> the house of Israel. | And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

<sup>8</sup> Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out devils: freely ye received, freely give.

<sup>10b</sup> for your journey,

<sup>10e</sup> nor staff:  
for the labourer is worthy of his food.

<sup>10a</sup> no wallet

<sup>9</sup> Get you no gold, nor silver, nor brass <sup>b</sup> in your purses <sup>c</sup>

<sup>10d</sup> nor shoes,

<sup>10c</sup> neither two coats,

<sup>11</sup> And into whatsoever city or village ye shall enter, }  
search out who in it is worthy;  
and there abide till ye go forth. }

<sup>12</sup> And as ye enter into the house, salute t.

<sup>13</sup> And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

<sup>14</sup> And whosoever shall not receive you,

nor hear your words,  
as ye go forth out of that house or that city,  
shake off the dust of your feet.

<sup>15</sup> Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable

<sup>a</sup> Num. xxvii. 17.; Ezek. xxxiv. 5.

<sup>b</sup> χαλκόν, Mark and Matt.: ἀργύριον, Luke.

<sup>c</sup> ζώνη, Mark and Matt.: βαλλάντιον, Luke.

## THE APOSTLES.

## Matt. iv.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus went about in *all Galilee*,  
teaching in their synagogues,  
and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,  
and healing all manner of disease  
and all manner of sickness among the people.

## Luke x.

<sup>2</sup> And he said unto them,  
The harvest is plenteous,  
but the labourers are few :  
pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest,  
that he send forth labourers into his harvest.

## Luke ix.

<sup>1a</sup> And he called the twelve *together*,

<sup>2a</sup> And he sent them forth

<sup>1b</sup> and gave them *power* and authority over *all devils*,  
and to cure diseases.

<sup>3a</sup> And he said unto them,

<sup>2b</sup> to preach the kingdom of *God*,  
and to heal <sup>1</sup> the sick.

<sup>3b</sup> Take nothing for your journey  
neither staff,  
<sup>3d</sup> nor bread,  
<sup>3c</sup> nor wallet,  
<sup>3e</sup> nor *money*<sup>b</sup>;

neither have two coats.

<sup>4</sup> And into whatsoever house ye enter,  
there abide, *and* thence depart.

<sup>5</sup> And as many as receive you not,

when ye depart from that city,  
shake off the dust *from* your feet

for a testimony against them.

[<sup>9</sup> . . . and heal the sick *that are therein*, and say unto them, }  
The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.  
<sup>11b</sup> . . . *howbeit*, know this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh. ]

<sup>3</sup> Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs in the  
midst of wolves.

[<sup>7b</sup> . . . for the labourer is worthy of his hire.]

<sup>4b</sup> no wallet,

<sup>4a</sup> Carry no *purse*<sup>c</sup>,

<sup>4c</sup> no shoes :

*and salute no man on the way.*

<sup>5</sup> And into whatsoever house ye shall <sup>3</sup>enter, *first say*, Peace  
*be to this house.*

<sup>6</sup> And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon him:  
but if not, it shall turn to you again.

<sup>7</sup> And in that same house remain, eating and drinking such  
things as they give : for the labourer is worthy of his hire.

<sup>8</sup> Go not from house to house. | And into whatsoever city ye  
enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before  
<sup>9</sup> you : | and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them,  
The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

<sup>10</sup> But into whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they receive  
you not,

*go out into the streets thereof and say,*

<sup>11</sup> *Even the dust from your city, that cleaveth to our feet, we  
do wipe off  
against you :*

*howbeit know this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh.*

<sup>12</sup> I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable

<sup>1</sup> M. omit the sick.

<sup>2</sup> M. add and two.

<sup>3</sup> M. or enter first, say.

## Mark vi.

- <sup>12</sup> And they went out,  
and preached that men should repent.  
<sup>13</sup> And they cast out many devils,  
and anointed with oil many that were sick,  
and healed them.

## Mark vi.

- A.  
<sup>14</sup> And king Herod heard thereof;  
for his name had become known:  
and <sup>1</sup> he said,  
John the Baptist  
is risen from the dead,  
and therefore do these powers work in him.  
<sup>15</sup> But others said, *It is Elijah.*  
And others said, *It is a prophet,*  
even as one of the prophets.  
<sup>16</sup> But Herod, when he heard thereof, said,  
John, whom I beheaded, he is risen.
- B.  
<sup>17</sup> For Herod himself had sent forth  
and laid hold upon John,  
and bound him in prison  
for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife:  
for he had married her.  
<sup>18</sup> For John said unto Herod,  
It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.  
<sup>19</sup> And Herodias set herself against him,  
and desired to kill him; and she could not;  
<sup>20</sup> for Herod feared John,  
knowing that he was a righteous man and a holy,  
and kept him safe.  
And when he heard him, he <sup>2</sup> was much perplexed;  
and he heard him gladly.
- C.  
<sup>21</sup> And when a convenient day was come,  
that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords,  
and the high captains, and the chief men of Galilee;  
<sup>22</sup> And when <sup>3</sup> the daughter of Herodias herself  
came in and danced,  
she pleased Herod, and them that sat at meat with him;  
and the king said unto the damsel,  
*Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt,*  
and I will give it thee.  
<sup>23</sup> And he swore unto her,  
Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee,  
unto the half of my kingdom.  
<sup>24</sup> And she went out, and said unto her mother,  
What shall I ask? And she said,  
The head of John the Baptist.  
<sup>25</sup> And she came in straightway with haste  
unto the king, and asked, saying,  
I will that thou forthwith give me in a charger  
the head of John the Baptist.  
<sup>26</sup> And the king was exceeding sorry;  
but for the sake of his oaths,  
and of them that sat at meat,  
he would not reject her.  
<sup>27</sup> And straightway the king sent forth a soldier of his guard,  
and commanded to bring his head:  
and he went and beheaded him in the prison,

## § 33. THE MISSION OF

## Matt. x.

for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah  
in the day of judgement, than for that city.

## § 34. THE DEATH OF

## Matt. xiv.

- <sup>1</sup> At that season Herod the tetrarch heard  
the report concerning Jesus,  
<sup>2</sup> and said unto his servants,  
*This is John the Baptist;*  
*he is risen from the dead;*  
and therefore do these powers work in him.
- <sup>3</sup> For Herod  
had laid hold on John,  
and bound him, and put him in prison  
for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife.
- <sup>4</sup> For John said unto him,  
It is not lawful for thee to have her.
- <sup>5</sup> And when he would have put him to death,  
he feared the multitude,  
because they counted him as a prophet.
- <sup>6</sup> But when Herod's birthday came,  
the daughter of Herodias  
danced in the midst,  
and pleased Herod.
- <sup>7</sup> Whereupon he promised with an oath  
to give her whatsoever she should ask.
- <sup>8</sup> And she, being put forward by her mother,  
saith,  
Give me here in a charger  
the head of John the Baptist.  
<sup>9</sup> And the king was grieved;  
but for the sake of his oaths,  
and of them which sat at meat with him,  
he commanded it to be given;  
<sup>10</sup> and he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. }



THE APOSTLES (*continued*).

Luke ix.

Luke x.

in *that* day for Sodom, }  
 than for that city. }

<sup>6</sup> And they departed, and went throughout the villages,  
 preaching the gospel,

and healing everywhere.

## JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke ix.

<sup>7</sup> Now Herod the tetrarch heard  
 of all that was done :  
 and he was much perplexed, because that it was said by some,  
 that John  
 was risen from the dead ;

<sup>8</sup> and by some, that Elijah had appeared ;  
 and by others,  
 that one of the old prophets was risen again.

Cf. § 46 A.

<sup>9</sup> And Herod said,  
 John I beheaded :  
 but who is this, about whom I hear such things ?  
 And he sought to see him.

Cf. Luke iii.

<sup>18</sup> With many other exhortations therefore preached he good  
<sup>19</sup> tidings unto the people ; | but Herod the tetrarch, being  
 reproved by him for Herodias his brother's wife, and for  
<sup>20</sup> all the evil things which Herod had done, | added yet this  
 above all, that he shut up John in prison.

Cf. John iii. 24.

[<sup>7</sup> . . . he was much perplexed . . .]

<sup>1</sup> M. they.<sup>2</sup> M. did many things.<sup>3</sup> M. his daughter Herodias.

## Mark vi.

- <sup>28</sup> and brought his head in a charger,  
and gave it to the damsel;  
and the damsel *gave* it to her mother.  
<sup>29</sup> And *when* his disciples *heard thereof*,  
they came and took up his corpse,  
and *laid it in a tomb*.

## Mark vi.

- A.  
<sup>30</sup> And the apostles *gather themselves together unto Jesus*;  
and they told him *all things*,  
whatsoever they had done,  
and whatsoever they had taught.  
<sup>31</sup> And he saith unto them,  
*Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place,*  
and rest a while.  
*For there were many coming and going,*  
and they had no leisure so much as to eat.  
<sup>32</sup> And they went away in the boat  
to a desert place apart.  
<sup>33</sup> And the people saw them going,  
and many knew them,  
and they ran there together on foot  
from all the cities, and outwent them.  
<sup>34</sup> And he came forth and saw a great multitude,  
and he had compassion on them,  
because they were 'as sheep not having a shepherd':<sup>a</sup>  
and he began to teach them many things.
- B.  
<sup>35</sup> And when the day was now far spent,  
his disciples came unto him, and said,  
The place is desert, and the day is now far spent:  
<sup>36</sup> send them away, that they may go  
into the country and villages round about,  
and buy themselves somewhat to eat.  
<sup>37</sup> But he answered and said unto them,  
Give ye them to eat.  
And they say unto him,  
*Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread,*  
and give them to eat?  
<sup>38</sup> And he saith unto them,  
*How many loaves have ye? Go and see.*  
And when they knew, they say,  
Five, and two fishes.
- C.  
<sup>39</sup> And he commanded them *that all should sit down*  
by companies upon the green grass.  
<sup>40</sup> And they sat down in ranks,  
by hundreds, and by fifties.  
<sup>41</sup> And he took the five loaves and the two fishes,  
and looking up to heaven, he blessed,  
and brake the loaves; and he gave  
to the disciples to set before them;  
and the two fishes divided he among them all.  
<sup>42</sup> And they did all eat, and were filled.  
<sup>43</sup> And they took up  
broken pieces, twelve basketfuls,  
and also of the fishes.  
<sup>44</sup> And they that ate the loaves were five thousand men.

## § 34. THE DEATH OF

## Matt. xiv.

- <sup>11</sup> And his head was brought in a charger,  
and given to the damsel:  
and she brought it to her mother.  
<sup>12</sup> And his disciples  
came, and took up the corpse,  
and buried him;  
and they went and told Jesus.

## § 35. THE FEEDING OF

## Matt. xiv.

- [<sup>12b</sup> . . . and they went  
and told Jesus.]
- <sup>13</sup> Now when Jesus heard it, he withdrew from thence in a boat,  
to a desert place apart:  
and when the multitudes heard thereof,  
  
they followed him on foot  
from the cities.  
<sup>14</sup> And he came forth, and saw a great multitude,  
and he had compassion on them,  
  
and healed their sick.
- <sup>15</sup> And when even was come,  
the disciples came to him, saying,  
The place is desert, and the time is already past;  
send the multitudes away, that they may go  
into the villages,  
and buy themselves food.  
<sup>16</sup> But Jesus said unto them,  
*They have no need to go away; give ye them to eat.*  
<sup>17</sup> And they say unto him,  
  
We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.  
<sup>18</sup> And he said, *Bring them hither to me.*
- <sup>19</sup> And he commanded the multitudes to sit down  
on the grass;  
  
and he took the five loaves, and the two fishes,  
and looking up to heaven, he blessed,  
and brake and gave  
the loaves to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes.  
<sup>20</sup> And they did all eat, and were filled:  
and they took up that which remained over  
of the broken pieces, twelve baskets full.  
<sup>21</sup> And they that did eat were about five thousand men,  
beside women and children.

<sup>a</sup> Num. xxvii. 17; Ezek. xxxiv. 5.

JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

## THE FIVE THOUSAND.

Luke ix.

<sup>10</sup> And the apostles, *when they were returned*,  
declared unto him  
what things they had done.

Cf. John vii. 1-14.

And he *took them*, and withdrew  
apart to a city called *Bethsaida*.

<sup>11</sup> But the multitudes *perceiving* it

followed him :

and he *welcomed them*,

and *spake to them of the kingdom of God*,  
and *them that had need of healing* he healed.

Matt. ix.

<sup>36</sup> But when he saw the multitudes,  
he *was moved with compassion* for them,  
because they were *distressed and scattered*,  
'as sheep not having a shepherd'.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>12a</sup> And the day *began to wear away* ;  
and the *twelve* came, and said unto him,

<sup>12b</sup> *for we are here in a desert place*.

<sup>12b</sup> Send the multitude away, that they may go  
into the villages and country round about,  
and *lodge, and get victuals* :

<sup>13a</sup> But he said unto them,  
Give ye them to eat.

And they said,

<sup>13b</sup> *except we should go and buy food for all this people*.

<sup>13b</sup> We have *no more than five loaves and two fishes* ;

<sup>14b</sup> And he *said unto his disciples*, *Make them sit down*  
in companies,

<sup>15</sup> And they *did so, and made them all sit down*.

<sup>14c</sup> *about fifty each*.

<sup>16</sup> And he took the five loaves and the two fishes,  
and looking up to heaven, he blessed *them*,  
and brake ; and gave  
to the disciples to set before the multitude.

<sup>17</sup> And they *did eat*, and were *all filled* :  
and *there was taken up that which remained over to them*  
of broken pieces, twelve baskets.

<sup>14a</sup> For they were about five thousand men.

## Mark vi.

- <sup>45</sup> And straightway he constrained his disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side to *Bethsaida*, while he himself sendeth the multitude away.
- <sup>46</sup> And after he had *taken leave* of them, he *departed* into the mountain to pray.
- <sup>47</sup> And when even was come, the boat was in the midst of the sea, and he alone *on the land*.
- <sup>48</sup> And *seeing them* distressed in rowing, for the wind was contrary unto them, about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking on the sea; and he would have passed by them:
- <sup>49</sup> but they, when they saw him walking on the sea, supposed that it was an apparition, and cried out:
- <sup>50</sup> for they all saw him, and were troubled. But he straightway spake with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.
- <sup>51</sup> And he went up unto them into the boat; and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves; for they understood not concerning the leaves, but their heart was hardened.

## Mark vi.

- <sup>53</sup> And when they had <sup>1</sup>crossed over, they came to the land unto Gennesaret, and moored to the shore.
- <sup>54</sup> And when they were come out of the boat, straightway the people knew him,
- <sup>55</sup> and ran round about that whole region, and began to carry about on their beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.
- <sup>56</sup> And wheresoever he entered, into villages, or into cities, or into the country, they laid the sick in the market-places, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were made whole.

## Mark vii.

- <sup>1</sup> And there are gathered together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which had come from Jerusalem,
- <sup>2</sup> and had seen that some of his disciples ate their bread with
- <sup>3</sup> defiled, that is, unwashen, hands. | For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands diligently, eat not,
- <sup>4</sup> holding the tradition of the elders: | and when they come

## § 36. WALKING ON

## Matt. xiv.

- <sup>22</sup> And straightway he constrained the disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side, till he should send the multitudes away.
- <sup>23</sup> And after he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain apart to pray: and when even was come, he was there alone.
- <sup>24</sup> But the boat was <sup>2</sup>now in the midst of the sea, } distressed by the waves; } for the wind was contrary.
- <sup>25</sup> And in the fourth watch of the night he came unto them, walking upon the sea.
- <sup>26</sup> And when the disciples saw him walking upon the sea, they were troubled, saying, } It is an apparition; } and they cried out for fear. }
- <sup>27</sup> But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.
- <sup>28</sup> And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me
- <sup>29</sup> come unto thee upon the waters. | And he said, Come. And Peter went down from the boat, and walked upon the waters,
- <sup>30</sup> to come to Jesus. | But when he saw the wind<sup>4</sup>, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying, Lord, save me. |
- <sup>31</sup> And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and took hold of him, and saith unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?
- <sup>32</sup> And when they were gone up into the boat, the wind ceased.
- <sup>33</sup> And they that were in the boat worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

## § 37. HEALING AT

## Matt. xiv.

- <sup>34</sup> And when they had crossed over, they came to the land, unto Gennesaret.
- <sup>35</sup> And when the men of that place knew him, they sent into all that region round about, and brought unto him, all that were sick;
- <sup>36</sup> and they besought him that they might only touch the border of his garment: and as many as touched were made whole.

## § 38. ON THE TRADITION

## Matt. xv.

- <sup>1</sup> Then there came to Jesus from Jerusalem Pharisees } and scribes, }



THE WATER.

Cf. John vi. 15-21.

GENNESARET.

Cf. John vi. 22-25.

OF THE ELDERS.

Cf. Luke xi.

<sup>37</sup> Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to dine with him :  
<sup>38</sup> and he went in, and sat down to meat. | And when the  
 Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed  
<sup>39</sup> before dinner. | And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye

<sup>1</sup> M. or crossed over to the land, they came unto Gennesaret.

<sup>2</sup> M. many furlongs distant from the land.

<sup>3</sup> M. and came.

<sup>4</sup> M. add strong.

## § 38. ON THE TRADITION

## Mark vii.

*from the market-place, except they wash themselves, they eat not : and many other things there be which they have received to hold, washings of cups, and pots, and brassen vessels<sup>1</sup>.*

- <sup>5</sup> And the Pharisees and the scribes ask him,  
 Why walk not thy disciples  
 according to the tradition of the elders,  
 but eat their bread with defiled hands ?  
<sup>6</sup> And he said unto them,  
 Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites,  
*as it is written,*  
 'This people honoureth me with their lips,  
 But their heart is far from me.  
<sup>7</sup> But in vain do they worship me,  
 Teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men.'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>8</sup> Ye leave the commandment of God,  
 and hold fast the tradition of men.  
<sup>9</sup> And he said unto them,  
 Full well do ye reject the commandment of God,  
 that ye may keep your tradition.  
<sup>10</sup> For Moses said, 'Honour thy father and thy mother ;'<sup>b</sup>  
 and, 'He that speaketh evil of father or mother,  
 let him die the death.'<sup>c</sup>  
<sup>11</sup> but ye say,  
 If a man shall say to his father or his mother,  
 That wherewith thou mightest have been profited by  
 is *Corban*, that is to say, Given to God ;  
<sup>12</sup> ye no longer suffer him to do aught for  
 his father or his mother ;  
<sup>13</sup> making void the word of God by your tradition,

*which ye have delivered :  
 and many such like things ye do.*

## Mark vii.

- <sup>14</sup> And he called to him the multitude again,  
 and said unto them,  
 Hear me all of you, and understand :  
<sup>15</sup> There is nothing from without the man,  
 that going into him can defile him :  
 but the things which proceed out of the man  
 are those that defile the man<sup>2</sup>.  
<sup>17</sup> And when he was entered into the house from the multitude,  
 his disciples asked of him the parable.  
<sup>18</sup> And he saith unto them,  
 Are ye so without understanding also ?  
 Perceive ye not, that whatsoever from without  
 goeth into the man, it cannot defile him ;  
<sup>19</sup> because it goeth not into his heart,  
 but into his belly, and goeth out into the draught ?  
*This he said, making all meats clean.*  
<sup>20</sup> And he said, that which proceedeth out of the man,

<sup>a</sup> Isa. xxix. 13.<sup>b</sup> Exod. xx. 12; Deut. v. 16.<sup>c</sup> Exod. xxi. 17.

## Matt. xv.

- saying,  
<sup>2</sup> Why do thy disciples transgress  
 the tradition of the elders ?  
*for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.*  
<sup>3a</sup> And he answered and said unto them,  
<sup>7</sup> Ye hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you,  
*saying,*  
<sup>8</sup> 'This people honoureth me with their lips ;  
 But their heart is far from me.  
<sup>9</sup> But in vain do they worship me,  
 Teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men.'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>3b</sup> Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God  
*because of your tradition ?*  
<sup>4</sup> For God said, 'Honour thy father and thy mother :'<sup>b</sup>  
 and, 'He that speaketh evil of father or mother,  
 let him die the death.'<sup>c</sup>  
<sup>5</sup> But ye say,  
 Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother,  
 That wherewith thou mightest have been profited by me  
 is given to God ;  
<sup>6</sup> he shall not honour  
 his father<sup>3</sup>.  
 And ye have made void the word of God because of your  
 tradition.

## § 39. ON

## Matt. xv.

- <sup>10</sup> And he called to him the multitude,  
 and said unto them,  
 Hear, and understand :  
<sup>11</sup> Not that which entereth into the mouth }  
 defileth the man ; }  
 but that which proceedeth out of the mouth,  
 this defileth the man.  
<sup>12</sup> Then came the disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou  
 that the Pharisees were offended, when they heard this  
<sup>13</sup> saying ? | But he answered and said, Every plant which my  
 heavenly Father planted not, shall be rooted up.  
<sup>14</sup> Let them alone : they are blind guides.  
 And if the blind guide the blind,  
 both shall fall into a pit.  
<sup>15</sup> And Peter answered and said unto him,  
 Declare unto us the parable.  
<sup>16</sup> And he said,  
 Are ye also even yet without understanding ?  
<sup>17</sup> Perceive ye not, that whatsoever  
 goeth into the mouth  
*passeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught ?*  
<sup>18</sup> But the things which proceed out of the mouth

OF THE ELDERS (*continued*).

Luke xi.

*Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter; but  
 40 your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness. | Ye  
 foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside  
 41 also? | Howbeit give for alms those things which are within;  
 and behold, all things are clean unto you.*

## DEFILEMENT.

Luke vi.

*39 And he spake also a parable unto them,  
 Can the blind guide the blind?  
 shall they not both fall into a pit?*

<sup>1</sup> M. *add* and couches.<sup>2</sup> M. *add* <sup>15</sup> If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear.<sup>3</sup> M. *add* or his mother.

## Mark vii.

- that defileth the man.
- <sup>21</sup> For from within, out of the heart of men, evil thoughts proceed,
- <sup>22</sup> fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, covetings, wickednesses, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, railing, pride, foolishness :
- <sup>23</sup> all these evil things proceed from within, and defile the man.

## Mark vii.

- <sup>24</sup> And from thence he arose, and went away into the borders of Tyre <sup>1</sup> and Sidon. And he entered into a house, and would have no man know it : and he could not be hid.
- <sup>25</sup> But straightway a woman, whose little daughter had an unclean spirit, having heard of him, came and fell down at his feet.
- <sup>26</sup> Now the woman was a <sup>2</sup> Greek, a Syrophœnician by race. And she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.
- <sup>27</sup> And he said unto her,  
Let the children first be filled :  
for it is not meet to take the children's bread and cast it to the dogs.
- <sup>28</sup> But she answered and saith unto him, Yea, Lord : even the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.
- <sup>29</sup> And he saith unto her,  
For this saying go thy way ;  
the devil is gone out of thy daughter.
- <sup>30</sup> And she went away unto her house, and found the child laid upon the bed, and the devil gone out.

## Mark vii.

- <sup>31</sup> And again he went out from the borders of Tyre, and came through Sidon unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the borders of Decapolis.
- <sup>32</sup> And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech ; and they beseech him to lay his hand upon him. | And he took him aside from the multitude privately, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spat, and
- <sup>34</sup> touched his tongue ; | and looking up to heaven, he sighed,
- <sup>35</sup> and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. | And his ears were opened, and the bond of his tongue was loosed,
- <sup>36</sup> and he spake plain. | And he charged them that they should tell no man : but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it.

## Matt. xv.

- come forth out of the heart ; and they defile the man.
- <sup>19</sup> For out of the heart come forth evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, railings :
- <sup>20</sup> these are the things which defile the man : but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not the man.

## § 40. THE SYROPHŒNICIAN

## Matt. xv.

- <sup>21</sup> And Jesus went out thence, and withdrew into the parts of Tyre and Sidon.

- <sup>22</sup> And behold, a Canaanitish woman

came out from those borders,  
[<sup>25</sup> . . . she came and worshipped him . . . ]

- and cried, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David ; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.
- <sup>23</sup> But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away ; for she crieth after us. | But he answered and said, I was not sent but
- <sup>24</sup> unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. | But she came and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.
- <sup>26</sup> And he answered and said,

It is not meet to take the children's bread and cast it to the dogs.

- <sup>27</sup> But she said,  
Yea, Lord : for even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table. }
- <sup>28</sup> Then Jesus answered and said unto her,  
O woman, great is thy faith :  
be it done unto thee even as thou wilt.

And her daughter was healed from that hour.

## § 41. THE DEAF MAN WITH AN

## Matt. xv.

- <sup>29</sup> And Jesus departed thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee ; and he went up into the mountain, and sat there.
- <sup>30</sup> And there came unto him great multitudes, having with them the lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and they cast them down at his feet, and he healed them :



DEFILEMENT (*continued*).

WOMAN.

Cf. Matt. x.

<sup>6</sup> . . . but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

IMPEDIMENT IN HIS SPEECH.

Cf. § 45.

<sup>1</sup> M. *omit* and Sidon.

<sup>2</sup> M. *or* Gentile.

## Mark vii.

- <sup>37</sup> *And they were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well : he maketh even the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.*

## Mark viii.

- <sup>1</sup> *In those days, when there was again a great multitude, and they had nothing to eat, he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them,*  
<sup>2</sup> *I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat :*  
<sup>3</sup> *and if I send them away fasting to their home, they will faint in the way ; and some of them are come from far.*  
<sup>4</sup> *And his disciples answered him, Whence shall one be able to fill these men with bread here in a desert place ?*  
<sup>5</sup> *And he asked them, How many loaves have ye ? And they said, Seven.*  
<sup>6</sup> *And he commandeth the multitude to sit down on the ground : and he took the seven loaves, and having given thanks, he brake, and gave to his disciples, to set before them ; and they set them before the multitude.*  
<sup>7</sup> *And they had a few small fishes : and having blessed them, he commanded to set these also before them.*  
<sup>8</sup> *And they did eat, and were filled : and they took up, of broken pieces that remained over,*  
*seven baskets.*  
<sup>9</sup> *And they were about four thousand :*  
*and he sent them away.*  
<sup>10</sup> *And straightway he entered into the boat with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.*

## Mark viii.

- <sup>11</sup> *And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.*  
<sup>12</sup> *And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith,*

*Why doth this generation seek a sign ? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.*

## § 41. THE DEAF MAN WITH AN

Matt. xv.

- <sup>31</sup> *insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb speaking, the maimed whole, and the lame walking, and the blind seeing : and they glorified the God of Israel.*

## § 42. THE FEEDING OF

Matt. xv.

- <sup>32</sup> *And Jesus called unto him his disciples, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat : and I would not send them away fasting, lest haply they faint in the way.*  
<sup>33</sup> *And the disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so many loaves in a desert place, as to fill so great a multitude ?*  
<sup>34</sup> *And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye ? And they said, Seven, and a few small fishes.*  
<sup>35</sup> *And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground ;*  
<sup>36</sup> *and he took the seven loaves and the fishes ; and he gave thanks and brake, and gave to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes,*  
<sup>[34 . . . and a few small fishes . . .]</sup>  
<sup>37</sup> *And they did all eat, and were filled : and they took up that which remained over of the broken pieces, seven baskets full.*  
<sup>38</sup> *And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children.*  
<sup>39</sup> *And he sent away the multitudes, and entered into the boat,*  
*and came into the borders of Magadan.*

## § 43. JESUS REFUSES

Matt. xvi.

- <sup>1</sup> *And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.*  
<sup>2</sup> *But he answered and said unto them,*  
<sup>1</sup> *When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather : for the*  
<sup>3</sup> *heaven is red. | And in the morning, It will be foul weather to-day : for the heaven is red and lowering. Ye know how to discern the face of the heaven ; but ye cannot discern the signs of the times.*  
<sup>4a</sup> *An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign ;*  
*and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of Jonah.*

IMPEDIMENT IN HIS SPEECH (*continued*).

## THE FOUR THOUSAND.

## TO GIVE A SIGN.

Luke xi.

Matt. xii.

- <sup>16</sup> And *others*,  
 tempting him,  
 sought of him a sign from heaven. }  
<sup>29</sup> And *when the multitudes were gathering together unto him*,  
 he began to say,

- <sup>38</sup> Then certain of the *scribes* and Pharisees  
 answered him, saying,  
*Master, we would see a sign from thee.*

- <sup>39</sup> But he answered  
 and said unto them,

This generation is an evil generation: it seeketh after a sign;

An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign;

and there shall no sign be given to it  
 but the sign of Jonah.

and there shall no sign be given to it  
 but the sign of Jonah the prophet:

- <sup>30</sup> For even as Jonah became a sign unto the Ninevites,

- <sup>40</sup> for as Jonah was three days and three nights  
 in the belly of the whale;

so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights  
 in the heart of the earth.

<sup>1</sup> M. omit to end of v. 3.

## Mark viii.

§ 44. THE LEAVEN OF  
Matt. xvi.

- <sup>13</sup> And he left them,  
and again entering into the boat departed  
to the other side.
- <sup>14</sup> And they forgot to take bread;  
and they had not in the boat with them  
more than one loaf.
- <sup>15</sup> And he charged them, saying,  
Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees  
and the leaven of Herod.
- <sup>16</sup> And they reasoned one with another, saying,  
We have no bread.
- <sup>17</sup> And Jesus perceiving it saith unto them,  
Why reason ye because ye have no bread?  
do ye not yet perceive, neither understand?  
have ye your heart hardened?
- <sup>18</sup> *‘Having eyes, see ye not?’<sup>a</sup>*  
and do ye not remember?
- <sup>19</sup> When I brake the five loaves among the five thousand,  
how many baskets<sup>b</sup> full of broken pieces took ye up?  
They say unto him, Twelve.
- <sup>20</sup> And when the seven among the four thousand,  
how many basketfuls<sup>c</sup> of broken pieces took ye up?  
And they say unto him, Seven.
- <sup>21</sup> And he said unto them,  
Do ye not yet understand?

- <sup>4b</sup> And he left them,  
and departed.
- <sup>5</sup> And the disciples came to the other side  
and forgot to take bread.
- <sup>6</sup> And Jesus said unto them,  
Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees  
and Sadducees.
- <sup>7</sup> And they reasoned among themselves, saying,  
We took no bread.
- <sup>8</sup> And Jesus perceiving it said, *O ye of little faith,*  
why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have no bread?
- <sup>9</sup> Do ye not yet perceive,

neither remember  
the five loaves of the five thousand,  
and how many baskets<sup>b</sup> ye took up?

- <sup>10</sup> neither the seven loaves of the four thousand,  
and how many baskets<sup>c</sup> ye took up?

- <sup>11</sup> *How is it that ye do not perceive  
that I spake not to you concerning bread?  
But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.*
- <sup>12</sup> *Then understood they how that he bade them  
not beware of the leaven of bread,  
but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.*

## § 45. A BLIND MAN

## Mark viii.

- <sup>22</sup> And they come unto Bethsaida. And they bring to him a blind  
<sup>23</sup> man, and beseech him to touch him. | And he took hold of  
the blind man by the hand, and brought him out of the village;  
and when he had spit on his eyes, and laid his hands upon  
<sup>24</sup> him, he asked him, Seest thou aught? | And he looked up,  
and said, I see men; for I behold them as trees, walking. |  
<sup>25</sup> Then again he laid his hands upon his eyes; and he looked  
<sup>26</sup> stedfastly, and was restored, and saw all things clearly. | And  
he sent him away to his home, saying, Do not even enter into  
the village.

## Mark viii.

- A.  
<sup>27</sup> And Jesus went forth, and his disciples,  
into the villages of Caesarea Philippi:  
and in the way he asked his disciples,  
saying unto them, Who do men say that I am?
- <sup>28</sup> And they told him, saying, John the Baptist:  
and others Elijah;  
but others, One of the prophets.
- <sup>29</sup> And he asked them, But who say ye that I am?  
Peter answereth and saith unto him,

## § 46. PETER'S CONFESSION

## Matt. xvi.

- <sup>13</sup> Now when Jesus came  
into the parts of Caesarea Philippi,  
he asked his disciples,  
saying, Who do men say that <sup>1</sup> the Son of man is?
- <sup>14</sup> And they said, Some say John the Baptist;  
some, Elijah;  
and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.
- <sup>15</sup> He saith unto them, But who say ye that I am?
- <sup>16</sup> And Simon Peter answered and said,

<sup>a</sup> Jer. v. 21; Ezek. xii. 2.<sup>b</sup> κάρφιοι (cf. § 35).<sup>c</sup> σφυρίδες (cf. § 42).



## THE PHARISEES.

Luke xi, xii.

- <sup>53</sup> And when he was come out from thence, the scribes and the Pharisees began to press upon him vehemently, and to <sup>54</sup> provoke him to speak of many things; | laying wait for him, to catch something out of his mouth.
- xii. <sup>1</sup> In the meantime, when the many thousands of the multitude were gathered together, insomuch that they trode one upon another,

he began to <sup>2</sup> say unto his disciples first of all,  
Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees,

which is hypocrisy.

## AT BETHSAIDA.

Cf. § 41.

## OF FAITH; AND THE SEQUEL.

Luke ix.

Cf. John vi. 66-71.

- <sup>18</sup> And it came to pass, as he was praying alone, }  
the disciples were with him :  
and he asked them,  
saying, Who do the multitudes say that I am ?
- <sup>19</sup> And they answering said, John the Baptist ;  
but others say, Elijah ;  
and others, that one of the old prophets is risen again.
- <sup>20</sup> And he said unto them, But who say ye that I am ?  
And Peter answering said,

Cf. § 34 A.

<sup>1</sup> M. I the Son of man am.<sup>2</sup> M. or say unto his disciples, First of all beware ye.

## Mark viii.

Thou art the Christ.

<sup>30</sup> And he charged them  
that they should tell no man of him.

B.

<sup>31</sup> And he began to *teach* them,  
that the Son of man must suffer many things,  
and be rejected *by* the elders, and the chief priests,  
and the scribes, and be killed,  
and *after three days* rise again.

<sup>32</sup> And he *spake the saying openly*.  
And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

<sup>33</sup> But he turning about, *and seeing his disciples*,  
*rebuked* Peter, and saith,  
Get thee behind me, Satan :  
for thou mindest not the things of God,  
but the things of men.

## Mark viii, ix.

<sup>34</sup> And he *called unto him the multitude*  
*with* his disciples, and said unto them,  
If any man would come after me,  
let him deny himself, and take up his cross,  
and follow me.

<sup>35</sup> For whosoever would save his life  
shall lose it ;  
and whosoever shall lose his life

for my sake *and the gospel's*  
shall save it.

<sup>36</sup> For what doth it profit a man,  
to gain the whole world,  
and forfeit his life ?

<sup>37</sup> For what should a man give in exchange for his life ?

<sup>38</sup> For whosoever shall be ashamed  
of me and of my words  
*in this adulterous and sinful generation*,  
the Son of man *also* shall be ashamed of him,  
when he cometh in the glory of his Father  
with the holy angels.

ix. <sup>1</sup> And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you,  
There be some here of them that stand by,  
which shall in no wise taste of death,  
till they see the kingdom of God come *with power*.

## Matt. xvi.

Thou art the Christ, *the Son of the living God*.

<sup>17</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto him, *Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah : for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. | And I also say unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church ; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. | I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of*

*heaven :  
and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth*

*shall be bound in heaven :  
and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth*

*shall be loosed in heaven.*  
<sup>20</sup> Then charged he the disciples  
that they should tell no man *that he was the Christ*.

<sup>21</sup> *From that time* began Jesus to shew unto his disciples,  
how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things  
of the elders and chief priests  
and scribes, and be killed,  
and the third day be raised up.

<sup>22</sup> And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him,  
*saying, Be it far from thee, Lord : this shall never be unto thee.*

<sup>23</sup> But he turned,  
and said unto Peter,  
Get thee behind me, Satan : *thou art a stumbling-block unto me :  
for thou mindest not the things of God,  
but the things of men.*

## Matt. xvi.

<sup>24</sup> Then said Jesus  
unto his disciples,  
If any man would come after me,  
let him deny himself, and take up his cross,  
and follow me.

<sup>25</sup> For whosoever would save his life  
shall lose it :  
and whosoever shall lose his life

for my sake  
shall *find* it.

<sup>26</sup> For what shall a man be profited,  
if he shall gain the whole world,  
and forfeit his life ?  
or what shall a man give in exchange for his life ?

<sup>27</sup> For the Son of man  
shall come in the glory of his Father  
with his angels ;  
and then <sup>a</sup> shall he render unto every man  
according to his deeds. <sup>1 a</sup>

<sup>28</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
There be some of them that stand here,  
which shall in no wise taste of death,  
till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

<sup>a</sup> Ps. lxii. 12 ; Prov. xxiv. 12.

OF FAITH; AND THE SEQUEL (*continued*).

## Luke ix.

The Christ of God.

## Matt. xviii.

<sup>18</sup> *Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven : and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*

<sup>21</sup> But he charged them, and commanded them to tell this to no man ;

saying,  
<sup>22</sup> The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up.

Cf. §§ 51, 59.

## DISCIPLESHIP.

## Luke ix.

<sup>23</sup> And he said unto *all*, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross *daily*, and follow me.

<sup>24</sup> For whosoever would save his life shall lose it ; but whosoever shall lose his life

for my sake, the same shall save it.

<sup>25</sup> For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and *lose or* forfeit his *own self*?

<sup>26</sup> For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words,

of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in *his own glory*, and the glory of the Father, and of the holy angels.

<sup>27</sup> But I tell you of a truth, There be some of them that stand here, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

## Matt. x.

<sup>38</sup> And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not *worthy of me*.

<sup>39</sup> He that *findeth* his life shall lose it ; and he that loseth his life for my sake shall *find* it.

Cf. Matt. x.

<sup>32</sup> Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father which is in heaven. | But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

## Luke xvii.

<sup>33</sup> Whosoever shall *seek to gain* his life shall lose it : but whosoever shall lose his life

shall *preserve* it.

Cf. Luke xii.

<sup>8</sup> And I say unto you, Every one who shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God : | <sup>9</sup> but he that denieth me in the presence of men shall be denied in the presence of the angels of God.

[With Mark viii. 38 cf. Matt. xii. 39=xvi. 4<sup>a</sup> An evil and adulterous generation . . .]

## Mark ix.

## Matt. xvii.

A.

- <sup>2</sup> And after six days  
Jesus taketh with him  
Peter, and James, and John,  
and bringeth them up into a high mountain  
apart *by themselves* :  
and he was transfigured before them :
- <sup>3</sup> and his garments became *glistening, exceeding white ;*  
*so as no fuller on earth can whiten them.*
- <sup>4</sup> And there appeared unto them  
Elijah with Moses :  
and they were talking with Jesus.

- <sup>1</sup> And after six days  
Jesus taketh with him  
Peter, and James, and John *his brother*,  
and bringeth them up into a high mountain  
apart :
- <sup>2</sup> and he was transfigured before them :  
*and his face did shine as the sun,*  
and his garments became white  
*as the light.*
- <sup>3</sup> And behold, there appeared unto them  
Moses and Elijah  
talking with him.

B.

- <sup>5</sup> And Peter answereth and saith to Jesus,  
*Rabbi*, it is good for us to be here :  
and let us make three tabernacles ;  
one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.
- <sup>6</sup> For he wist not what to answer ;  
for they became sore afraid.

- <sup>4</sup> And Peter answered, and said unto Jesus,  
*Lord*, it is good for us to be here :  
*if thou wilt, I will make here three tabernacles ;*  
one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.

- <sup>7</sup> And there came a cloud overshadowing them :  
and there came a voice out of the cloud,  
'This is my beloved Son : ' <sup>a</sup>  
'hear ye him.' <sup>c</sup>

- [<sup>6</sup> . . . and were sore afraid.]
- <sup>5</sup> While he was yet speaking,  
*behold*, a bright cloud overshadowed them :  
and *behold*, a voice out of the cloud, saying,  
'This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased ; ' <sup>a</sup>  
'hear ye him.' <sup>c</sup>

- <sup>8</sup> And suddenly looking round about,  
they saw no one *any more*,  
save Jesus only *with themselves*.

- <sup>6</sup> And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face,  
and were sore afraid.
- <sup>7</sup> And Jesus came and touched them and said,  
*Arise, and be not afraid.*
- <sup>8</sup> And lifting up their eyes,  
they saw no one,  
save Jesus only.

C.

- <sup>9</sup> And as they were coming down from the mountain,  
he charged them that they should tell no man  
what things they had seen,  
*save when the Son of man should have risen again*  
from the dead.
- <sup>10</sup> And they kept the saying, questioning among themselves  
*what the rising again from the dead should mean.*

- <sup>9</sup> And as they were coming down from the mountain,  
Jesus commanded them, saying, }  
Tell the vision to no man, }  
until the Son of man be risen  
from the dead.

## Mark ix.

## Matt. xvii.

- <sup>11</sup> And they asked him, saying,  
<sup>1</sup> The scribes say that Elijah must first come.
- <sup>12</sup> And he said unto them,  
'Elijah' indeed cometh *first*,  
and 'restoreth' <sup>b</sup> all things :  
and *how is it written of the Son of man*,  
that he should suffer many things  
and be set at nought ?
- <sup>13</sup> But I say unto you, that Elijah is come,  
and they have also done unto him  
whatsoever they listed,  
*even as it is written of him.*

- <sup>10</sup> And his disciples asked him, saying,  
*Why then say the scribes that Elijah must first come ?*
- <sup>11</sup> And he answered and said,  
'Elijah' indeed cometh,  
and 'shall restore' <sup>b</sup> all things :
- <sup>12b</sup> Even so shall the Son of man also  
suffer of them.
- <sup>12a</sup> but I say unto you, that Elijah is come *already*,  
and they knew him not, but did unto him  
whatsoever they listed.
- <sup>13</sup> Then understood the disciples that he spake unto them  
of John the Baptist.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. xlii. 1 ; cf. Ps. ii. 7.<sup>b</sup> Mal. iv. 5.<sup>c</sup> Deut. xviii. 15.



## TRANSFIGURATION.

Luke ix.

<sup>28</sup> And it came to pass about eight days after these sayings,  
 he took with him  
 Peter and John and James,  
 and went up into the mountain  
 to pray.  
<sup>29</sup> And as he was praying, the fashion of his countenance was altered,  
 and his raiment became white and dazzling.

<sup>30</sup> And behold,  
 there talked with him two men, }  
 which were Moses and Elijah; }  
<sup>31</sup> who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he  
<sup>32</sup> was about to accomplish at Jerusalem. | Now Peter and they  
 that were with him were heavy with sleep; but when they  
 were fully awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that  
 stood with him.  
<sup>33</sup> And it came to pass, as they were parting from him,

Peter said unto Jesus,  
 Master, it is good for us to be here :  
 and let us make three tabernacles ;  
 one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah :  
 not knowing what he said.

<sup>34b</sup> and they feared as they entered into the cloud.

<sup>34a</sup> And while he said these things,  
 there came a cloud, and overshadowed them :

<sup>35</sup> And a voice came out of the cloud, saying, }  
 'This is my <sup>2</sup> Son,' <sup>3</sup> my chosen : }  
 'hear ye him.' <sup>o</sup>

<sup>36</sup> And when the voice came,

Cf. John xii. 28.

Cf. § 4.

Jesus was found alone.

And they held their peace, and told no man  
 in those days any of the things which they had seen.

## OF ELIJAH.

Cf. John i. 19-28.

<sup>1</sup> M. add How is it that . . . ?<sup>2</sup> M. add beloved.

## § 50. A BOY WITH

## Mark ix.

- <sup>14</sup> And when they came to the disciples,  
*they saw a great multitude about them,*  
<sup>15</sup> and scribes questioning with them. | And straightway all the  
 multitude, when they saw him, were greatly amazed, and  
<sup>16</sup> running to him saluted him. | And he asked them, What  
 question ye with them?  
<sup>17</sup> And one of the multitude answered him,  
 Master, I brought unto thee my son,  
 which hath a dumb spirit;  
<sup>18</sup> and wheresoever it taketh him,  
 it dasheth him down:  
 and he foameth, and grindeth his teeth,  
 and pineth away:  
 and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast it out;  
 and they were not able.  
<sup>19</sup> And he answereth them and saith,  
 O faithless generation,  
 how long shall I be with you?  
 how long shall I bear with you?  
 bring him unto me.  
<sup>20</sup> And they brought him unto him:  
 and when he saw him,  
 straightway the spirit tare him grievously;  
 and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.  
<sup>21</sup> And he asked his father,  
 How long time is it since this hath come unto him?  
 And he said, From a child.  
<sup>22</sup> And oft-times it hath cast him both into the fire  
 and into the waters, to destroy him:  
 but if thou canst do anything,  
 have compassion on us, and help us.  
<sup>23</sup> And Jesus said unto him, If thou canst!  
 All things are possible to him that believeth.  
<sup>24</sup> Straightway the father of the child cried out, and said,<sup>1</sup>  
 I believe; help thou mine unbelief.  
<sup>25</sup> And when Jesus saw  
 that a multitude came running together,  
 he rebuked the unclean spirit, saying unto him,  
 Thou dumb and deaf spirit,  
 I command thee, come out of him,  
 and enter no more into him.  
<sup>26</sup> And having cried out, and torn him much,  
 he came out:  
 and the child became as one dead;  
 insomuch that the more part said, He is dead.  
<sup>27</sup> But Jesus took him by the hand,  
 and raised him up; and he arose.  
<sup>28</sup> And when he was come into the house,  
 his disciples asked him privately<sup>2</sup>, saying,  
 We could not cast it out.  
<sup>29</sup> And he said unto them,  
 This kind can come out by nothing,  
 save by prayer<sup>3</sup>.

## Matt. xvii.

- <sup>14</sup> And when they were come  
 to the multitude,  
 there came to him a man, kneeling to him, and saying,  
<sup>15a</sup> Lord, have mercy on my son:  
 for he is epileptic, and suffereth grievously:  
<sup>16</sup> And I brought him to thy disciples,  
 and they could not cure him.  
<sup>17</sup> And Jesus answered and said,  
 O faithless and perverse generation,  
 how long shall I be with you?  
 how long shall I bear with you?  
 bring him hither to me.  
<sup>15b</sup> for oft-times he falleth into the fire,  
 and oft-times into the water.  
<sup>18</sup> And Jesus  
 rebuked him  
 and the devil went out from him:  
 and the boy was cured from that hour.  
<sup>19</sup> Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said,  
 Why could not we cast it out?  
<sup>20</sup> And he saith unto them,  
 Because of your little faith: for verily I say unto you, If ye  
 have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this  
 mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall  
 remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you<sup>4</sup>.

## A DUMB SPIRIT.

Luke ix.

- <sup>37</sup> And it came to pass, on the next day,  
when they were come down from the mountain, }  
a great multitude met him.
- <sup>38</sup> And behold, a man from the multitude cried, saying,  
Master, I beseech thee to look upon my son;  
<sup>39</sup> for he is mine only child: and behold, a spirit  
taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out;  
and it teareth him  
that he foameth, and it hardly departeth from him,  
bruising him sorely.
- <sup>40</sup> And I besought thy disciples to cast it out;  
and they could not.
- <sup>41</sup> And Jesus answered and said,  
O faithless and perverse generation,  
how long shall I be with you,  
and bear with you?  
bring hither thy son.
- <sup>42</sup> And as he was yet a coming,  
the devil dashed him down, and tare him grievously.

But Jesus

rebuked the unclean spirit,

and healed the boy, and gave him back to his father.

<sup>43a</sup> And they were all astonished at the majesty of God.<sup>1</sup> M. add with tears.<sup>2</sup> M. or How is it that we . . . ?<sup>3</sup> M. add and fasting.<sup>4</sup> M. add <sup>21</sup> But this kind goeth not out save by prayer and fasting.

## § 51. THE SECOND PREDICTION

## Mark ix.

## Matt. xvii.

- <sup>30</sup> *And they went forth from thence,  
and passed through Galilee;  
and he would not that any man should know it.*  
<sup>31</sup> *For he taught his disciples, and said unto them,  
The Son of man is delivered up into the hands of men,  
and they shall kill him;  
and when he is killed,  
after three days he shall rise again.*  
<sup>32</sup> *But they understood not the saying,*

and were afraid to ask him.

- <sup>22</sup> *And while they<sup>1</sup> abode in Galilee,  
  
Jesus said unto them,  
The Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men;  
<sup>23</sup> and they shall kill him,  
  
and the third day he shall be raised up.  
And they were exceeding sorry.*

## Mark ix.

## Matt. xviii.

## § 52. ON

- <sup>33</sup> *And they came to Capernaum:  
and when he was in the house  
he asked them,  
What were ye reasoning in the way?*  
<sup>34</sup> *But they held their peace:  
for they had disputed one with another in the way  
who was the greatest.*  
<sup>35</sup> *And he sat down, and called the twelve;  
and he saith unto them,  
If any man would be first,  
he shall be last of all, and minister of all.*  
<sup>36</sup> *And he took a little child,  
and set him in the midst of them:  
and taking him in his arms, he said unto them,*  
<sup>37</sup> *Whosoever shall receive one of such little children  
  
in my name, receiveth me:  
  
and whosoever receiveth me,  
receiveth not me, but him that sent me.*

- <sup>1</sup> *In that hour came the disciples unto Jesus, saying,  
Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?*  
<sup>2</sup> *And he called to him a little child,  
and set him in the midst of them,  
and said,  
<sup>3</sup> Verily I say unto you, Except ye turn, and become as little  
children, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.  
<sup>4</sup> Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child,  
the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.  
<sup>5</sup> And whoso shall receive one such little child  
  
in my name, receiveth me: . . .*

## Mark ix.

## § 53. OF HELPERS WHO

- <sup>38</sup> *John said unto him, Master,  
we saw one casting out devils in thy name:  
and we forbade him, because he followed not us.*  
<sup>39</sup> *But Jesus said, Forbid him not:  
for there is no man which shall do  
a mighty work in my name,  
and be able quickly to speak evil of me.*  
<sup>40</sup> *For he that is not against us is for us.*  
<sup>41</sup> *For whosoever shall give you  
a cup of water to drink,  
because ye are Christ's,  
verily I say unto you,  
he shall in no wise lose his reward.*



## OF THE PASSION.

Luke ix.

<sup>43b</sup> But while all were marvelling at all the things which he did,

<sup>44</sup> he said unto his disciples, *Let these words sink into your ears :*  
for the Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men.

Cf. §§ 46, 59.

<sup>45</sup> But they understood not this saying,  
*and it was concealed from them, that they should not perceive it :*  
and they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

## HUMILITY.

Luke ix.

<sup>46</sup> And there arose a reasoning among them,  
which of them should be greatest.  
<sup>47</sup> But when Jesus saw the reasoning of their heart,

Cf. Luke xxii.

<sup>24</sup> And there arose also a contention among them,  
which of them is accounted to be greatest.

Cf. Matt. xxiii.

<sup>11</sup> But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.  
Cf. § 60.

he took a little child,  
and set him by his side,  
<sup>48</sup> and said unto them,

Whosoever shall receive *this* little child

in my name, receiveth me :

and whosoever shall receive me  
receiveth him that sent me :  
*for he that is least among you all,*  
*the same is great.*

Matt. x.

<sup>40</sup> He that receiveth you  
receiveth me,  
and he that receiveth me  
receiveth him that sent me.

Cf. John xii. 44-45, xiii. 20, xiv. 24, xv. 23.

Luke x.

<sup>16</sup> He that heareth you hear-  
eth me ;  
and he that rejecteth you,  
rejecteth me ;  
and he that rejecteth me  
rejecteth him that sent me.

## ARE NOT DISCIPLES.

Luke ix.

<sup>49</sup> And John answered and said, Master,  
we saw one casting out devils in thy name ;  
and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us.  
<sup>50</sup> But Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not :

for he that is not against you is for you.

Matt. x.

<sup>42</sup> And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones  
a cup of cold water only,  
in the name of a disciple,  
verily I say unto you,  
he shall in no wise lose his reward.

<sup>1</sup> M. were gathering themselves together.

## Mark ix.

- <sup>42</sup> And whosoever shall cause one of these little ones that believe<sup>1</sup> on me to stumble, it were *better* for him if a great millstone<sup>a</sup> were hanged about his neck, and he were *cast* into the sea.
- <sup>43</sup> And if thy hand cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having thy two hands to go into hell, into the *unquenchable* fire.
- <sup>45</sup> And if thy foot cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life halt, rather than having thy two feet to be cast into *hell*.
- <sup>47</sup> And if thine eye cause thee to stumble, cast it out: it is good for thee to enter into *the kingdom of God* with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell;
- <sup>48</sup> where 'their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.'<sup>b</sup>

## Mark ix.

- A.  
<sup>49</sup> For every one shall be salted with fire<sup>2</sup>.
- B.  
<sup>50</sup> Salt is good: but if the salt have lost its saltness, wherewith will ye season it?
- C.  
Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another.

## Mark x.

- <sup>1</sup> And he arose from thence, and cometh into the borders of Judaea and beyond Jordan: and multitudes come together unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.
- <sup>2</sup> And there came unto him Pharisees and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.
- <sup>3</sup> And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?
- <sup>4</sup> And they said, Moses suffered 'to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.'<sup>c</sup>
- <sup>5</sup> But Jesus said unto them,

<sup>a</sup> μύλος ὀνικῆς, Mark and Matt. : λίθος μυλικός, Luke.<sup>b</sup> Isa. lxvi. 24.<sup>c</sup> Deut. xxiv. 1.

## Matt. xviii.

- <sup>6</sup> . . . but whoso shall cause one of these little ones which believe on me to stumble, it is *profitable* for him that a great millstone<sup>a</sup> should be hanged about his neck, and that he should be sunk in the depth of the sea.
- <sup>7</sup> Woe unto the world because of occasions of stumbling! for it must needs be that the occasions come; but woe to that man through whom the occasion cometh!
- <sup>8</sup> And if thy hand or thy foot causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed or halt, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the eternal fire.
- [<sup>8</sup> . . . thy foot . . .  
. . . halt . . .  
. . . two feet . . .  
. . . be cast . . .]
- <sup>9</sup> And if thine eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into the hell of fire.
- <sup>10</sup> See that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven<sup>3</sup>.

## § 55. THREE SAYINGS

## Matt. v.

- <sup>13</sup> Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men.

## § 56. ON DIVORCE

## Matt. xix.

- <sup>1</sup> And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these words, he departed from Galilee, and came into the borders of Judaea beyond Jordan;
- <sup>2</sup> and great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.
- <sup>3</sup> And there came unto him Pharisees, tempting him, and saying, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?
- <sup>4a</sup> And he answered and said, Have ye not read, . . .
- <sup>7</sup> They say unto him, Why then did Moses command 'to give a bill of divorcement, and to put her away'?<sup>c</sup>
- <sup>8</sup> He saith unto them,

## OFFENCES.

Luke xvii.

<sup>2b</sup> . . . *rather than that* he should cause one of these little ones to stumble.

<sup>2a</sup> It were *well* for him if a millstone <sup>a</sup> were hanged about his neck, and he were *thrown* into the sea, . . .

<sup>1</sup> And he said unto his disciples, }  
It is impossible but that occasions of stumbling should come: }  
but woe unto him, through whom *they* come!

Matt. v.

<sup>30</sup> And if thy *right* hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is *profitable* to thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy *whole* body go into hell.

<sup>29</sup> And if thy *right* eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is *profitable* for thee that one of thy members should perish

and not thy *whole* body be cast into hell.

## ABOUT SALT.

Luke xiv.

<sup>34</sup> Salt *therefore* is good: but if even the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is *fit* neither for the land nor for the dunghill: men cast it out.

## AND ADULTERY.

Matt. v.

<sup>31</sup> It was said also, 'Whoever shall put away his wife, }  
let him give her a *writing* of divorcement':<sup>c</sup>

<sup>1</sup> M. omit on me.

<sup>2</sup> M. add and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

<sup>3</sup> M. add <sup>11</sup> For the Son of man came to save that which was lost.

## § 56. ON DIVORCE

## Mark x.

For your hardness of heart  
he wrote you this commandment.

- <sup>6</sup> But from the beginning of the creation,  
'Male and female made he them.'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>7</sup> 'For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother,  
<sup>1</sup> and shall cleave to his wife;  
<sup>8</sup> and the twain shall become one flesh :'<sup>b</sup>  
so that they are no more twain, but one flesh.  
<sup>9</sup> What therefore God hath joined together,  
let not man put asunder.  
<sup>10</sup> And in the house  
the disciples asked him again of this matter.  
<sup>11</sup> And he saith unto them,  
Whosoever shall put away his wife,  
  
and marry another,  
committeth adultery against her:  
<sup>12</sup> and if she herself shall put away her husband,  
and marry another, she

committeth adultery.

## Mark x.

- <sup>13</sup> And they brought unto him little children,  
that he should touch them :  
and the disciples rebuked them.  
<sup>14</sup> But when Jesus saw it,  
he was moved with indignation,  
and said unto them,  
Suffer the little children to come unto me ;  
forbid them not :  
for of such is the kingdom of God.  
<sup>15</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God  
as a little child,  
he shall in no wise enter therein.  
<sup>16</sup> And he took them in his arms,  
and blessed them,  
laying his hands upon them.

## Mark x.

- A.  
<sup>17</sup> And as he was going forth into the way,  
there ran one to him, and kneeled to him,  
and asked him, Good Master,  
what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life ?  
<sup>18</sup> And Jesus said unto him,

## Matt. xix.

- Moses for your hardness of heart  
suffered you to put away your wives :  
but from the beginning it hath not been so. }  
<sup>4b</sup> . . . that he which made them from the beginning }  
'made them male and female,'<sup>a</sup> and said  
<sup>5</sup> 'For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother,  
and shall cleave to his wife ;  
and the twain shall become one flesh ?'<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>6</sup> So that they are no more twain, but one flesh.  
What therefore God hath joined together,  
let not man put asunder.  
  
<sup>9</sup> And I say unto you,  
Whosoever shall put away his wife,  
<sup>2</sup> except for fornication,  
and shall marry another,  
committeth adultery :  
  
<sup>3</sup> and he that marrieth her when she is put away  
committeth adultery.  
<sup>10</sup> The disciples say unto him, If the case of the man is so  
<sup>11</sup> with his wife, it is not expedient to marry. | But he said  
unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, but they to  
<sup>12</sup> whom it is given. | For there are eunuchs, which were so born  
from their mother's womb : and there are eunuchs, which  
were made eunuchs by men : and there are eunuchs, which  
made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake.  
He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

## § 57. BLESSING THE

## Matt. xix.

- <sup>13</sup> Then were there brought unto him little children,  
that he should lay his hands on them, and pray :  
and the disciples rebuked them.  
<sup>14</sup> But Jesus  
  
said,  
Suffer the little children, and forbid them not, }  
to come unto me :  
for of such is the kingdom of heaven.  
  
<sup>15</sup> And he laid his hands on them,  
and departed thence.

## § 58. ON RENUNCIATION

## Matt. xix.

- <sup>16</sup> And behold  
one came to him  
and said, Master,  
what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life ?  
<sup>17</sup> And he said unto him,

<sup>a</sup> Gen. i. 27.

<sup>b</sup> Gen. ii. 24.



**AND ADULTERY** (*continued*).

Luke xvi.

<sup>18</sup> Every one that putteth away his wife,  
and marrieth another,  
committeth adultery :

and he that marrieth one that is put away *from a husband*  
committeth adultery.

Matt. v.

<sup>32</sup> But I say unto you,  
that every one that putteth away his wife,  
*saving for the cause of fornication,*  
*maketh her an adulteress :*

and whosoever shall marry her when she is put away  
committeth adultery.

**LITTLE CHILDREN.**

Luke xviii.

<sup>15</sup> And they brought unto him also their *babes*,  
that he should touch them :  
but when the disciples saw it, they rebuked them. }  
<sup>16</sup> But Jesus *called them unto him,*

saying,  
Suffer the little children to come unto me,  
and forbid them not :  
for of such is the kingdom of God.  
<sup>17</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God  
as a little child,  
he shall in no wise enter therein.

Matt. xviii.

<sup>3b</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
*Except ye turn, and become*  
*as little children,*  
*ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven. }*  
<sup>4</sup> *Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child,*  
*the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.*

**OF RICHES.**

Luke xviii.

<sup>18</sup> And a certain ruler  
asked him, saying, Good Master,  
what shall I do to inherit eternal life ?  
<sup>19</sup> And Jesus said unto him,

<sup>1</sup> M. *omit* and shall cleave to his wife.  
<sup>2</sup> M. *omit to end of v. 9.*

<sup>2</sup> M. *saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress.*  
<sup>4</sup> M. Good Master.

## § 58. ON RENUNCIATION

## Mark x.

Why callest thou me good ?  
none is good save one, even God.

<sup>19</sup> Thou knowest the commandments,

‘Do not kill, Do not commit adultery,  
Do not steal, Do not bear false witness,’  
Do not defraud, ‘Honour thy father and mother.’<sup>a</sup>

<sup>20</sup> And he said unto him, *Master*,  
all these things have I observed from my youth.

<sup>21</sup> And Jesus *looking upon him loved him*,  
and said unto him,  
One thing thou lackest :  
go, sell *whatsoever* thou hast,  
and give to the poor,  
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven :  
and come, follow me.

<sup>22</sup> But *his countenance fell* at the saying,  
and he went away sorrowful :  
for he was one that had great possessions.

B.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus *looked round about*,  
and saith unto his disciples,  
How hardly shall they that have riches  
enter into the kingdom of God !

<sup>24</sup> And the disciples were amazed at his words.  
But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them,  
*Children, how hard is it<sup>1</sup> for them that trust in riches  
to enter into the kingdom of God !*

<sup>25</sup> It is easier for a camel  
to go through a needle’s eye,  
than for a rich man  
to enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>26</sup> And they were astonished exceedingly,

saying unto him, Then who can be saved ?

<sup>27</sup> Jesus looking upon them saith,  
With men it is impossible, *but not with God* :  
for ‘all things are possible with God.’<sup>c</sup>

C.

<sup>28</sup> Peter began to say unto him,  
Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

<sup>29</sup> Jesus said, Verily I say unto you,

There is no man that hath left house,  
or brethren, or sisters, or mother, or father,  
or children, or lands, for my sake,  
and for the gospel’s sake,

<sup>30</sup> but he shall receive a hundredfold *now* in this time,  
*houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers,  
and children, and lands,*  
*with persecutions ;*  
and in the world to come eternal life.

<sup>31</sup> But many that are first shall be last ;  
and the last first.

## Matt. xix.

<sup>2</sup> Why askest thou me concerning that which is good ?  
One there is who is good :

*but if thou wouldst enter into life, keep the commandments.*

<sup>18</sup> He saith unto him, Which ? And Jesus said,  
‘Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not commit adultery,  
Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

<sup>19</sup> Honour thy father and thy mother : ’<sup>a</sup> and  
‘Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.’<sup>b</sup>

<sup>20</sup> The young man saith unto him,  
All these things have I observed : *what lack I yet ?*

<sup>21</sup> Jesus  
said unto him,  
*If thou wouldst be perfect*, [<sup>20</sup> . . . what lack I yet ? . . . ]  
go, sell that thou hast,  
and give to the poor,  
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven :  
and come, follow me.

<sup>22</sup> But when the young man heard the saying,  
he went away sorrowful :  
for he was one that had great possessions.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus  
said unto his disciples,  
*Verily I say unto you, it is hard for a rich man  
to enter into the kingdom of heaven.*

<sup>24</sup> And again I say unto you,

It is easier for a camel  
to go through a needle’s eye,  
than for a rich man  
to enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>25</sup> And *when the disciples heard it, they were astonished ex-  
ceedingly*,

saying, Who then can be saved ?

<sup>26</sup> And Jesus looking upon them said to them,  
With men this is impossible ;  
but ‘with God all things are possible.’<sup>c</sup>

<sup>27</sup> Then answered Peter and said unto him,  
Lo, we have left all, and followed thee ; *what then shall  
we have ?*

<sup>28</sup> And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you,  
*that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the  
Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall  
sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.*

<sup>29</sup> And every one that hath left houses,  
or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother,  
or children, or lands, for my name’s sake,

shall receive a hundredfold,

and shall inherit eternal life.

<sup>30</sup> But many shall be last that are first,  
and first that are last.

<sup>a</sup> Exod. xx. 12 f. = Deut. v. 16 f.

<sup>b</sup> Lev. xix. 18.

<sup>c</sup> Gen. xviii. 14 ; Job xlii. 2 ; Zech. viii. 6 (LXX).

OF RICHES (*continued*).

## Luke xviii.

Why callest thou me good ?

none is good, save one, even God.

<sup>20</sup> Thou knowest the commandments,

'Do not commit adultery, Do not kill,  
Do not steal, Do not bear false witness,  
Honour thy father and mother.'<sup>2</sup>

Cf. § 68.

<sup>21</sup> And he said,  
All these things have I observed from my youth up.

<sup>22</sup> And *when Jesus heard it*  
he said unto him,  
One thing thou lackest yet :  
sell *all* that thou hast,  
and *distribute* unto the poor,  
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven :  
and come, follow me.

<sup>23</sup> But when he heard *these things*,  
he became *exceeding* sorrowful ;  
for he was *very rich*.

<sup>24</sup> And Jesus *seeing him*  
said,  
How hardly shall they that have riches  
enter into the kingdom of God !

<sup>25</sup> For it is easier for a camel  
to *enter in* through a needle's eye,  
than for a rich man  
to enter into the kingdom of God.

<sup>26</sup> And they that heard it

said, Then who can be saved ?

<sup>27</sup> But he said,  
*The things which are impossible with men*  
are possible with God.

<sup>28</sup> And Peter said,  
Lo, we have left <sup>2</sup> *our own*, and followed thee.

<sup>29</sup> And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you,

There is no man that hath left house,  
or *wife*, or brethren, or *parents*,  
or children,  
*for the kingdom of God's sake*,

<sup>30</sup> Who shall not receive *manifold more* in this time,

and in the world to come eternal life.

## Matt. xx.

<sup>16</sup> So the last shall be first,  
and the first last.

## Luke xiii.

<sup>30</sup> *And behold*,  
There are last which shall  
be first,  
and there are first which  
shall be last.

<sup>1</sup> M. omit for them that trust in riches.

<sup>2</sup> M. or our own homes.

<sup>2</sup> M. Why callest thou me good ? None is good save one, even God.

## § 59. THE THIRD PREDICTION

## Mark x.

- 32 And *they were* in the way  
going up to Jerusalem;  
and Jesus was *going before them*;  
and *they were amazed*;  
and *they that followed were afraid*.  
And he took again the twelve,  
and began to tell them *the things*  
*that were to happen unto him*, saying,  
33 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;  
  
and the Son of man shall be delivered  
unto the chief priests and the scribes;  
and they shall condemn him to death,  
and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles:  
34 and they shall mock him,  
and shall spit upon him,  
and shall scourge him, and shall kill him;  
and *after three days* he shall rise again.

## Mark x.

- 35 And there come *near* unto him  
*James and John*, the sons of Zebedee,  
saying unto him, *Master*,  
*we would that thou shouldst do for us*  
*whatsoever* we shall ask of thee.  
36 And he said unto *them*,  
What would ye that I should do for you?  
37 And *they* said unto him,  
*Grant unto us* that we may sit,  
one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand  
in thy glory.  
38 But Jesus said unto them,  
Ye know not what ye ask.  
Are ye able to drink the cup that I drink?  
or to be baptized with the baptism  
that I am baptized with?  
39 And they said unto him, We are able.  
And Jesus said unto them,  
The cup that I drink ye shall drink;  
and with the baptism that I am baptized withal  
shall ye be baptized:  
40 but to sit on my right hand or on my left hand  
is not mine to give: but it is for them  
for whom it hath been prepared.  
41 And when the ten heard it,  
they began to be moved with indignation  
concerning *James and John*.  
42 And Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them,  
Ye know that *they which are accounted* to rule  
over the Gentiles, lord it over them;  
and their great ones exercise authority over them.  
43 But it is not so among you:  
but whosoever would become great among you,  
shall be your minister:  
44 and whosoever would be first among you,  
shall be servant of all.  
  
45 For verily the Son of man came  
not to be ministered unto, but to minister,  
and to give his life a ransom for many.

## Matt. xx.

- 17 And as Jesus was [17b ... in the way ... ]  
going up to Jerusalem,  
  
he took the twelve *disciples apart*,  
and in the way he said unto them,  
  
18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;  
  
and the Son of man shall be delivered  
unto the chief priests and scribes;  
and they shall condemn him to death,  
19 and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles  
to mock,  
  
and to scourge, and to crucify:  
and the third day he shall be raised up.

## § 60. THE REQUEST OF

## Matt. xx.

- 20 Then came to him  
*the mother of the sons of Zebedee with her sons*  
*worshipping him*,  
  
and asking a certain thing of him.  
21 And he said unto *her*,  
What wouldest thou?  
*She* saith unto him,  
*Command that these my two sons* may sit,  
one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand,  
in thy kingdom.  
22 But Jesus answered and said,  
Ye know not what ye ask.  
Are ye able to drink the cup that I am about to drink?  
  
They say unto him, We are able.  
23 He saith unto them,  
*My cup indeed* ye shall drink:  
  
but to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand,  
is not mine to give, but it is for them  
for whom it hath been prepared of my Father.  
24 And when the ten heard it,  
they were moved with indignation  
concerning the two brethren.  
25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said,  
Ye know that the rulers  
of the Gentiles lord it over them,  
and their great ones exercise authority over them.  
26 Not so shall it be among you:  
but whosoever would become great among you  
shall be your minister;  
27 and whosoever would be first among you  
shall be your servant:  
  
28 even as the Son of man came  
not to be ministered unto, but to minister,  
and to give his life a ransom for many.



## OF THE PASSION.

Luke xviii.

<sup>31</sup> And he took *unto him* the twelve,  
and said unto them,

Behold, we go up to Jerusalem,  
*and all the things that are written by the prophets*  
*shall be accomplished unto the Son of man.*

<sup>32</sup> For he shall be delivered up unto the Gentiles,  
and shall be mocked, *and shamefully entreated,*  
and spit upon :

<sup>33</sup> and they shall scourge and kill him :  
and the third day he shall rise again.

<sup>34</sup> *And they understood none of these things ; and this saying*  
*was hid from them, and they perceived not the things that*  
*were said.*

Cf. §§ 46, 51.

## JAMES AND JOHN.

Cf. Luke xii.

<sup>50a</sup> But I have a baptism  
to be baptized with . . . ;

Luke xxii.

<sup>25</sup> And he said unto them,  
The *kings*  
of the Gentiles have lordship over them ;  
and they that have authority over them *are called Benefactors.*

<sup>26</sup> But ye shall not be so :  
but he that is the greater among you,  
*let him become as the younger ;*  
and he that is chief,  
*as he that doth serve.*

<sup>27</sup> For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that  
*serveth ? is not he that sitteth at meat ?*  
*but I am in the midst of you*  
*as he that serveth.*

Matt. xxiii.

<sup>11</sup> But he that is greatest among you  
shall be your servant.

Cf. § 52.

Cf. John x. 15, xv. 13.

## Mark x.

- <sup>46</sup> *And they come to Jericho :*  
and as he went out from Jericho,  
*with his disciples and a great multitude,*  
*the son of Timaeus, Bartimaeus,*  
*a blind beggar,*  
was sitting by the way side.
- <sup>47</sup> And when he heard  
that it was Jesus of Nazareth,  
he *began* to cry out, and say,  
Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.
- <sup>48</sup> And many rebuked him,  
that he should hold his peace :  
but he cried out the more a great deal,  
Thou son of David, have mercy on me.
- <sup>49</sup> And Jesus stood still, and said, *Call ye him.*  
*And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good*  
<sup>50</sup> *cheer : rise, he calleth thee. | And he, casting away his*  
*garment, sprang up, and came to Jesus.*
- <sup>51</sup> And Jesus answered him, and said,  
What wilt thou that I should do unto thee ?  
And the blind man said unto him,  
*Rabboni,* that I may receive my sight.
- <sup>52</sup> And Jesus said unto him, *Go thy way,*  
thy faith hath made thee whole.  
And straightway he received his sight,  
and followed him *in the way.*

## Mark xi.

A.

- <sup>1</sup> And when they draw nigh unto Jerusalem,  
unto Bethphage and Bethany,  
at the mount of Olives,  
he sendeth two of his disciples,  
and saith unto them,
- <sup>2</sup> Go your way into the village that is over against you :  
and straightway as ye enter into it,  
ye shall find a colt tied,  
whereon no man ever yet sat ;  
loose him, and bring him.
- <sup>3</sup> And if any one say unto you,  
Why do ye this ? say ye,  
The Lord hath need of him ;  
and straightway he will send him *back hither.*

B.

- <sup>4</sup> And they went away, and found a colt  
*tied at the door without in the open street ;*  
and they loose him.
- <sup>5</sup> And certain of them that stood there said unto them,  
*What do ye, loosing the colt ?*
- <sup>6</sup> And they said unto them even as Jesus *had said :*  
*and they let them go.*
- <sup>7</sup> And they bring the colt unto Jesus,  
and cast on him their garments ;  
and he sat upon him.

§ 61. THE BLIND MAN  
Matt. xx.

- <sup>29</sup> And as they went out from Jericho,  
a great multitude *followed* him.
- <sup>30</sup> And behold,  
two blind men  
sitting by the way side,  
when they heard  
that Jesus was passing by,  
cried out, saying,  
*Lord, have mercy on us, thou son of David.*
- <sup>31</sup> And the multitude rebuked them,  
that they should hold their peace :  
but they cried out the more, saying,  
*Lord, have mercy on us, thou son of David.*
- <sup>32</sup> And Jesus stood still, and called them,  
  
and said,  
What will ye that I should do unto you ?
- <sup>33</sup> They say unto him,  
Lord, that our eyes may be opened.
- <sup>34</sup> And Jesus, being moved with compassion,  
touched their eyes :  
and straightway they received their sight,  
and followed him.

§ 62. THE ENTRY  
Matt. xxi.

- <sup>1</sup> And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem,  
and came unto Bethphage,  
unto the mount of Olives,  
then Jesus sent two disciples,  
saying unto them,
- <sup>2</sup> Go into the village that is over against you,  
and straightway  
ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her  
  
loose them, and bring them unto me.
- <sup>3</sup> And if any one say aught unto you,  
ye shall say,  
The Lord hath need of them ;  
and straightway he will send them.
- <sup>4</sup> Now this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was  
spoken by the prophet, saying,
- <sup>5</sup> ' Tell ye the daughter of Zion,  
Behold, thy King cometh unto thee,  
Meek, and riding upon an ass,  
And upon a colt the foal of an ass.' <sup>a</sup>
- <sup>6</sup> And the disciples went,  
  
and did even as Jesus appointed them,
- <sup>7</sup> and brought the ass, and the colt,  
and put on them their garments ;  
and he sat thereon.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. lxii. 11 ; Zech. ix. 9.

## AT JERICHO.

Luke xviii.

- <sup>35</sup> *And it came to pass,*  
*as he drew nigh unto Jericho,*
- a certain blind man  
 sat by the way side begging : }  
<sup>36</sup> *and hearing a multitude going by, he inquired what this meant.*  
<sup>37</sup> *And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.*  
<sup>38</sup> *And he cried, saying,*  
*Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.*  
<sup>39</sup> *And they that went before rebuked him,*  
*that he should hold his peace :*  
*but he cried out the more a great deal,*  
*Thou son of David, have mercy on me.*  
<sup>40</sup> *And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought unto him :*

- and when he was come near, he asked him,*  
<sup>41</sup> *What wilt thou that I should do unto thee ?*  
*And he said,*  
*Lord, that I may receive my sight.*  
<sup>42</sup> *And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight :*  
*thy faith hath made thee whole.*  
<sup>43</sup> *And immediately he received his sight,*  
*and followed him, glorifying God :*  
*and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.*

Cf. Mark v. 34 . . . thy faith hath made thee whole.  
 Cf. Luke vii. 50, xvii. 19.

## INTO JERUSALEM.

Luke xix.

- <sup>28</sup> *And when he had thus spoken, he went on before, going up*  
*to Jerusalem.*  
<sup>29</sup> *And it came to pass, when he drew nigh*  
*unto Bethphage and Bethany,*  
*at the mount that is called the mount of Olives,*  
*he sent two of the disciples,*  
<sup>30</sup> *saying,*  
*Go your way into the village over against you ;*  
*in the which as ye enter*  
*ye shall find a colt tied,*  
*whereon no man ever yet sat :*  
*loose him, and bring him.*  
<sup>31</sup> *And if any one ask you,*  
*Why do ye loose him ? thus shall ye say,*  
*The Lord hath need of him.*

- <sup>32</sup> *And they that were sent went away, and found*  
*even as he had said unto them.*  
<sup>33</sup> *And as they were loosing the colt,*  
*the owners thereof said unto them,*  
*Why loose ye the colt ?*  
<sup>34</sup> *And they said, The Lord hath need of him.*  
<sup>35</sup> *And they brought him to Jesus :*  
*and they threw their garments upon the colt,*  
*and set Jesus thereon.*

## Mark xi.

- <sup>8</sup> And many spread their garments upon the way ;  
and others branches,  
which they had cut from the fields.  
<sup>9</sup> And they that went before, and they that followed,  
cried, 'Hosanna ;  
Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord :'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>10</sup> Blessed is the kingdom that cometh,  
the kingdom of our father David :  
Hosanna in the highest.

C.

- <sup>11</sup> And he entered into Jerusalem,  
into the temple ;  
and when he had looked round about upon all things,  
it being now eventide,  
he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

## Mark xi.

A.

- <sup>12</sup> And on the morrow,  
when they were come out from Bethany,  
he hungered.  
<sup>13</sup> And seeing a fig tree afar off  
having leaves, he came,  
if haply he might find anything thereon :  
and when he came to it,  
he found nothing but leaves ;  
for it was not the season of figs.  
<sup>14</sup> And he answered and said unto it,  
No man eat fruit from thee  
henceforward for ever.  
And his disciples heard it.

B.

- <sup>15</sup> And they come to Jerusalem :  
and he entered into the temple,  
and began to cast out them that sold  
and them that bought in the temple,  
and overthrew the tables of the money-changers,  
and the seats of them that sold the doves ;  
<sup>16</sup> and he would not suffer that any man  
should carry a vessel through the temple.  
<sup>17</sup> And he taught, and said unto them,  
Is it not written, 'My house shall be called  
a house of prayer for all the nations ?'<sup>b</sup>  
but ye have made it 'a den of robbers.'<sup>c</sup>  
<sup>18</sup> And the chief priests and the scribes heard it,  
and sought how they might destroy him :

<sup>a</sup> Ps. cxviii. 25-26.<sup>b</sup> Isa. lvi. 7.<sup>c</sup> Jer. vii. 11.<sup>d</sup> Ps. cxxxvii. 9.

## § 62. THE ENTRY

## Matt. xxi.

- <sup>8</sup> And the most part of the multitude spread their garments  
in the way ;  
and others cut branches from the trees, }  
and spread them in the way.  
<sup>9</sup> And the multitudes that went before, and that followed,  
cried, saying, 'Hosanna' to the son of David :  
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord ;'<sup>a</sup>  
[... the son of David ...]  
Hosanna in the highest.

- <sup>10</sup> And when he was come into Jerusalem,

- <sup>11</sup> all the city was stirred, saying, Who is this ? | And the  
multitudes said, This is the prophet, Jesus, from Nazareth  
of Galilee.

## § 63. THE FIG TREE, AND THE

## Matt. xxi.

- <sup>18</sup> Now in the morning  
as he returned to the city,  
he hungered.  
<sup>19</sup> And seeing a fig tree by the way side,  
he came to it,

and found nothing thereon, but leaves only ;

and he saith unto it,  
Let there be no fruit from thee  
henceforward for ever.  
And immediately the fig tree withered away.

- <sup>12</sup> And Jesus entered into the temple<sup>1</sup> of God,  
and cast out all them that sold  
and bought in the temple,  
and overthrew the tables of the money-changers,  
and the seats of them that sold the doves ;

- <sup>13</sup> and he saith unto them,  
It is written, 'My house shall be called  
a house of prayer :'<sup>b</sup>  
but ye make it 'a den of robbers.'<sup>c</sup>  
<sup>14</sup> And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple :  
and he healed them.  
<sup>15</sup> But when the chief priests and the scribes saw

the wonderful things that he did, and the children that were



INTO JERUSALEM (*continued*).

Luke xix.

<sup>36</sup> And as he went, they spread their garments in the way.

Cf. John xii. 12-19.

<sup>37</sup> And as he was now drawing nigh, even at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works which they had seen ;<sup>38</sup> saying,  
'Blessed is' the King 'that cometh in the name of the Lord:'<sup>a</sup>

[... the King ...]

peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

<sup>39</sup> And some of the Pharisees from the multitude said unto  
<sup>40</sup> him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. | And he answered and said, I tell you that, if these shall hold their peace, the stones will cry out.<sup>41</sup> And when he drew nigh, he saw the city and wept over it,  
<sup>42</sup> saying, | If thou hadst known in this day, even thou, the things which belong unto peace ! but now they are hid from  
<sup>43</sup> thine eyes. | For the days shall come upon thee, when thine enemies shall cast up a bank about thee, and compass thee  
<sup>44</sup> round, and keep thee in on every side, | and shall 'dash' thee 'to the ground', and 'thy children'<sup>d</sup> within thee ; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another ; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

## CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE.

Luke xix.

[Cf. Luke xiii.

<sup>6</sup> And he spake this parable ; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard ; and he came seeking fruit thereon,  
<sup>7</sup> and found none. | And he said unto the vinedresser, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none : cut it down ; why doth it also cumber the ground ? |  
<sup>8</sup> And he answering saith unto him, Lord, let it alone this  
<sup>9</sup> year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it : | and if it bear fruit thenceforth, well ; but if not, thou shalt cut it down.]<sup>45</sup> And he entered into the temple,  
and began to cast out them that sold,

Cf. John ii. 13-16.

saying unto them,

<sup>46</sup> It is written, ' And my house shall be  
a house of prayer ' : <sup>b</sup>  
but ye have made it ' a den of robbers. ' <sup>c</sup><sup>47</sup> And he was teaching daily in the temple.

But the chief priests and the scribes and the principal men of the people sought to destroy him :

<sup>1</sup> M. omit of God.

## Mark xi.

for they feared him,  
for all the multitude was astonished at his teaching.

<sup>19</sup> And every evening he went forth out of the city.

C.

<sup>20</sup> And as they passed by in the morning,  
they saw the fig tree  
withered away from the roots.

<sup>21</sup> And Peter calling to remembrance  
saith unto him, *Rabbi, behold,*  
the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

<sup>22</sup> And Jesus answering saith unto them,

<sup>23</sup> Have faith in God. | Verily I say unto you,

Whosoever shall say unto this mountain,  
Be thou taken up and cast into the sea;  
and shall not doubt in his heart,  
but shall believe that what he saith cometh to pass;  
he shall have it.

D.

<sup>24</sup> Therefore I say unto you,  
All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for,  
believe that ye have received them,  
and ye shall have them.

<sup>25</sup> And whensoever ye stand praying,  
forgive, if ye have aught against any one;  
that your Father also which is in heaven  
may forgive you your trespasses<sup>1</sup>.

## Mark xi.

<sup>27</sup> And they come again to Jerusalem:  
and as he was walking in the temple,  
there come to him the chief priests,  
and the scribes, and the elders;

<sup>28</sup> and they said unto him,  
By what authority doest thou these things?  
or who gave thee this authority to do these things?

<sup>29</sup> And Jesus said unto them,  
I will ask of you one question,  
and answer me, and I will tell you  
by what authority I do these things.

<sup>30</sup> The baptism of John,  
was it from heaven, or from men? answer me.

<sup>31</sup> And they reasoned with themselves, saying,  
If we shall say, From heaven; he will say,  
Why then did ye not believe him?

<sup>32</sup> But should we say, From men—

they feared the people:  
for all<sup>2</sup> verily held John to be a prophet.

## § 63. THE FIG TREE, AND THE

Matt. xxi.

crying in the temple and saying, *Hosanna to the son of David*; they were moved with indignation, and said unto him, | *Hearest thou what these are saying? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea: did ye never read, 'Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?'*<sup>a</sup>

<sup>17</sup> And he left them, and went forth out of the city  
to Bethany, and lodged there.

[<sup>19b</sup> And immediately the fig tree  
withered away.]

<sup>20</sup> And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled,  
saying,

*How did the fig tree immediately wither away?*

<sup>21</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto them,

Verily I say unto you, if ye have faith,

and doubt not, ye shall not only do what is done to the fig  
tree, but

even if ye shall say unto this mountain,  
Be thou taken up and cast into the sea,

it shall be done.

<sup>22</sup> And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer,  
believing,  
ye shall receive.

## § 64. A QUESTION

Matt. xxi.

<sup>23</sup> And when he was come  
into the temple,  
the chief priests and the elders of the people }  
came unto him, as he was teaching,  
and said,

By what authority doest thou these things?  
and who gave thee this authority?

<sup>24</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto them,  
I also will ask you one question,  
which if ye tell me, I likewise will tell you  
by what authority I do these things.

<sup>25</sup> The baptism of John,  
whence was it? from heaven or from men?  
And they reasoned with themselves, saying,  
If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us,  
Why then did ye not believe him?

<sup>26</sup> But if we shall say, From men;

we fear the multitude;  
for all hold John as a prophet.

<sup>a</sup> Ps. viii. 2.

CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE (*continued*).

Luke xvii, xix, xxi.

xix. <sup>48</sup> and they could not find what they might do;  
for the people all hung upon him, listening.

xxi. <sup>37</sup> And every day he was teaching in the temple;  
and every night he went out,  
and lodged in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.

Cf. Matt. vii. 28 . . . the multitudes were astonished at his teaching. xxii. 33 And when the multitudes heard it, they were astonished at his teaching.

xvii. <sup>5</sup> And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.  
And the Lord said,  
<sup>6</sup> If ye have faith  
as a grain of mustard seed,

ye would say unto this sycamine tree,  
Be thou rooted up, and be thou planted in the sea;

and it would have obeyed you.

Matt. xvii.

<sup>20b</sup> . . . for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith  
as a grain of mustard seed,

ye shall say unto this mountain,  
Remove hence to yonder place;

and it shall remove;

and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

Cf. John xiv. 13, xv. 7, 16, xvi. 23.

Matt. vi.

<sup>14</sup> For if ye forgive men their trespasses,  
your heavenly Father  
will also forgive you.

<sup>15</sup> But if ye forgive not men their trespasses,  
neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

## ABOUT AUTHORITY.

Luke xx.

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, on one of the days,  
as he was teaching the people in the temple, and preaching the gospel, }  
there came upon him the chief priests  
and the scribes with the elders;

<sup>2</sup> and they spake, saying unto him, Tell us:  
By what authority doest thou these things?  
or who is he that gave thee this authority?

<sup>3</sup> And he answered and said unto them,  
I also will ask you a question;  
and tell me:

<sup>4</sup> The baptism of John,  
was it from heaven, or from men?

<sup>5</sup> And they reasoned with themselves, saying,  
If we shall say, From heaven; he will say,  
Why did ye not believe him?

<sup>6</sup> But if we shall say, From men;

all the people will stone us;  
for they be persuaded that John was a prophet.

Cf. Matt. xiv.

<sup>5</sup> And when he would have  
put him to death,  
he feared the multitude,  
because they counted him  
as a prophet.

Cf. Matt. xxi.

<sup>40</sup> And when they sought to  
lay hold on him,  
they feared the multitudes,  
because they took him for  
a prophet.

<sup>1</sup> M. add 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

<sup>2</sup> M. or held John to be a prophet indeed.



## Mark xi.

- <sup>33</sup> And they answered Jesus and say,  
We know not.  
And Jesus saith unto them,  
Neither tell I you  
by what authority I do these things.

## Mark xii.

- <sup>1</sup> And he began to speak unto *them* in parables.  
A man 'planted a vineyard,  
  
and set a hedge about it,  
and digged a *pit* for the winepress,  
and built a tower',<sup>a</sup>  
and let it out to husbandmen,  
and went into another country.  
<sup>2</sup> And at the season  
he sent to the husbandmen a servant,  
that he might receive *from the husbandmen*  
of the fruits of the vineyard.  
<sup>3</sup> And they took him, and beat him,  
and sent him away empty.  
<sup>4</sup> And *again* he sent unto them another servant;  
and him they *wounded in the head*,  
and handled shamefully.  
<sup>5</sup> And he sent another;  
and him they killed:  
and *many* others;  
*beating some, and killing some.*  
<sup>6</sup> *He had yet one*, a beloved son:  
he sent him *last* unto them, saying,  
They will reverence my son.  
<sup>7</sup> But those husbandmen  
said among themselves,  
This is the heir;  
come, let us kill him,  
and the inheritance *shall* be ours.  
<sup>8</sup> And they took him, and killed him,  
and cast him forth out of the vineyard.  
<sup>9</sup> What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do?  
  
he will come and destroy the husbandmen,  
and will give the vineyard unto others.  
  
<sup>10</sup> Have ye not read *even this* scripture;  
'The stone which the builders rejected,  
The same was made the head of the corner:  
<sup>11</sup> This was from the Lord,  
And it is marvellous in our eyes?'<sup>b</sup>  
  
<sup>12</sup> And they sought to lay hold on him;  
and they feared the multitude;  
  
for they perceived that he spake the parable against them:  
and they left him, and went away.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. v. 1.

## § 64. A QUESTION

## Matt. xxi.

- <sup>27</sup> And they answered Jesus, and said,  
We know not.  
He *also* said unto them,  
Neither tell I you  
by what authority I do these things.

## § 65. THE PARABLE OF

## Matt. xxi.

- <sup>33</sup> *Hear another parable:*  
*There was a man that was a householder*, which 'planted a  
vineyard,  
and set a hedge about it,  
and digged a winepress *in it*,  
and built a tower',<sup>a</sup>  
and let it out to husbandmen,  
and went into another country.  
<sup>34</sup> And *when* the season *of the fruits* drew near,  
he sent *his* servants to the husbandmen,  
to receive  
*his* fruits.  
<sup>35</sup> And the husbandmen took *his* servants, and beat one,  
  
and killed another, }  
and stoned another. }  
<sup>36</sup> *Again*, he sent other servants *more than the first*:  
and they *did* unto them *in like manner*,  
<sup>37</sup> But *afterward* he sent unto them *his son*, }  
saying, }  
They will reverence my son.  
<sup>38</sup> But the husbandmen, when they saw the son,  
said among themselves,  
This is the heir;  
come, let us kill him,  
and *take* his inheritance.  
<sup>39</sup> And they took him, and cast him forth }  
out of the vineyard, and killed him. }  
<sup>40</sup> *When* therefore the lord of the vineyard *shall* come, }  
what will he do unto those husbandmen? }  
<sup>41</sup> *They say* unto him, He will miserably destroy those miser-  
able men,  
and will let out the vineyard unto other husbandmen,  
*which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.*  
<sup>42</sup> Jesus saith unto them,  
Did ye *never* read in the scriptures,  
'The stone which the builders rejected,  
The same was made the head of the corner:  
This was from the Lord,  
And it is marvellous in our eyes?'<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>43</sup> *Therefore say I unto you*, *The kingdom of God shall be taken*  
*away from you*, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth  
the fruits thereof.  
<sup>44</sup> <sup>1</sup> And he that falleth on this stone  
shall be broken to pieces:  
but on whomsoever it shall fall,  
it will scatter him as dust.  
<sup>45</sup> And *when* they sought to lay hold on him,  
they feared the multitudes, *because they took him for a prophet.*  
<sup>45</sup> And *when* the chief priests and Pharisees heard his parables,  
they perceived that he spake of them.

<sup>b</sup> Ps. cxviii. 22-23.



ABOUT AUTHORITY (*continued*).

Luke xx.

- <sup>7</sup> And they answered,  
*that they knew not whence it was.*  
<sup>8</sup> And Jesus said unto them,  
 Neither tell I you  
 by what authority I do these things.

## THE VINEYARD.

Luke xx.

- <sup>9</sup> And he began to speak unto *the people this* parable :  
 A man 'planted a vineyard',<sup>a</sup>

- and let it out to husbandmen,  
 and went into another country *for a long time.*  
<sup>10</sup> And at the season  
 he sent unto the husbandmen a servant,  
*that they should give him*  
*of the fruit of the vineyard :*  
 but the husbandmen beat him,  
 and sent him away empty.  
<sup>11</sup> And he sent *yet* another servant :  
 and him *also* they beat,  
 and handled him shamefully, and sent him away empty.  
<sup>12</sup> And he sent *yet a third :*  
 and him *also* they wounded, and cast him forth.

- [<sup>11</sup> . . . him also they beat . . .]  
<sup>13</sup> And the lord of the vineyard said, *What shall I do ?* }  
*I will send my beloved son :*  
*it may be they will reverence him.*  
<sup>14</sup> But when the husbandmen saw him,  
 they *reasoned* one with another, saying,  
 This is the heir :  
 let us kill him.  
*that the inheritance may be ours.*  
<sup>15</sup> And they cast him forth out of the vineyard, }  
 and killed him.  
 What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do unto them ?  
<sup>16</sup> He will come and destroy *these* husbandmen,  
 and will give the vineyard unto others.  
*And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.*  
<sup>17</sup> But he looked upon them, and said,  
*What then is this that is written,*  
*'The stone which the builders rejected,*  
*The same was made the head of the corner ?'*<sup>b</sup>

- <sup>18</sup> Every one that falleth on that stone  
 shall be broken in pieces ;  
 but on whomsoever it shall fall,  
 it will scatter him as dust.  
 And the *scribes* and the chief priests  
 sought to lay *hands* on him *in that very hour ;* }  
 and they feared the *people :*  
 for they perceived that he spake this parable against them.

Cf. Matt. xxii.

<sup>22</sup> . . . And when they heard it, they marvelled, and left him,  
 and went their way.

<sup>1</sup> M. omit v. 44.

## § 66. A QUESTION ABOUT

## Mark xii.

- <sup>13</sup> And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, that they might catch him in talk.
- <sup>14</sup> And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest not for any one : for thou regardest not the person of men, but of a truth teachest the way of God :
- Is it lawful to give tribute <sup>a</sup> unto Caesar, or not ?
- <sup>15</sup> Shall we give, or shall we not give ?
- But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me ? bring me a penny, that I may see it.
- <sup>16</sup> And they brought it. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription And they said unto him, Caesar's.
- <sup>17</sup> And Jesus said unto them, Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and unto God the things that are God's.

And they marvelled greatly at him.

## Mark xii.

- <sup>18</sup> And there come unto him Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection ; and they asked him, saying,
- <sup>19</sup> Master, Moses wrote unto us, ' If a man's brother die, and leave a wife behind him, and leave no child, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.' <sup>b</sup>
- <sup>20</sup> There were seven brethren : and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed ;
- <sup>21</sup> and the second took her, and died, leaving no seed behind him ; and the third likewise :
- <sup>22</sup> and the seven left no seed. Last of all the woman also died.
- <sup>23</sup> In the resurrection whose wife shall she be of them ? for the seven had her to wife.
- <sup>24</sup> Jesus said unto them, Is it not for this cause that ye err, that ye know not the scriptures, nor the power of God ?
- <sup>25</sup> For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage ;
- but are as angels in heaven.
- <sup>26</sup> But as touching the dead, that they are raised ; have ye not read in the book of Moses, in the place concerning the Bush, how God spake unto him, saying,

<sup>a</sup> κῆνσον, Mark and Matt. ; φόρον, Luke.

## Matt. xxii.

- <sup>15</sup> Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might ensnare him in his talk.
- <sup>16</sup> And they send to him their disciples, with the Herodians, } saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, and carest not for any one : for thou regardest not the person of men. }
- <sup>17</sup> Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou ? Is it lawful to give tribute <sup>a</sup> unto Caesar, or not ?
- <sup>18</sup> But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, } Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites ? }
- <sup>19</sup> Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny. }
- <sup>20</sup> And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription ?
- <sup>21</sup> They say unto him, Caesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's ; and unto God the things that are God's.
- <sup>22</sup> And when they heard it, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

## § 67. A QUESTION ABOUT

## Matt. xxii.

- <sup>23</sup> On that day there came to him Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection : and they asked him, saying,
- <sup>24</sup> Master, Moses said, ' If a man die having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.' <sup>b</sup>
- <sup>25</sup> Now there were with us seven brethren : and the first married and deceased, and having no seed left his wife unto his brother ;
- <sup>26</sup> in like manner the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.
- <sup>27</sup> And after them all the woman died.
- <sup>28</sup> In the resurrection therefore whose wife shall she be of the seven ? }
- for they all had her. }
- <sup>29</sup> But Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.
- <sup>30</sup> For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as angels in heaven.
- <sup>31</sup> But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read
- that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

<sup>b</sup> Deut. xxv. 5 : cf. Gen. xxxviii. 8.

## TRIBUTE TO CAESAR.

## Luke xx.

- <sup>20</sup> *And they watched him, and sent forth spies,  
which feigned themselves to be righteous,  
that they might take hold of his speech,  
so as to deliver him up to the rule and to the authority of the governor.*
- <sup>21</sup> *And they asked him, saying, Master,  
we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly,  
and acceptest not the person of any,  
but of a truth teachest the way of God :*
- <sup>22</sup> *Is it lawful for us to give tribute <sup>a</sup> unto Caesar, or not ?*
- <sup>23</sup> *But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them,*
- <sup>24</sup> *Shew me a penny.*

- Whose image and superscription hath it ?  
And they said, Caesar's.*
- <sup>25</sup> *And he said unto them,  
Then render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's,  
and unto God the things that are God's.*
- <sup>26</sup> *And they were not able to take hold of the saying before the people :  
and they marvelled at his answer,  
and held their peace.*

## THE RESURRECTION.

## Luke xx.

- <sup>27</sup> *And there came to him certain of the Sadducees,  
they which say that there is no resurrection ;  
and they asked him, saying,*
- <sup>28</sup> *Master, Moses wrote unto us, that  
'if a man's brother die,'  
having a wife,  
'and he be childless,  
his brother should take the wife,  
and raise up seed unto his brother.'<sup>b</sup>*
- <sup>29</sup> *There were therefore seven brethren :*  
*and the first took a wife,  
and died childless ;*
- <sup>30</sup> *and the second ;*
- <sup>31</sup> *and the third took her ;  
and likewise the seven also left no children, and died.*
- <sup>32</sup> *Afterward the woman also died.*
- <sup>33</sup> *In the resurrection therefore  
whose wife of them shall she be ?  
for the seven had her to wife.*
- <sup>34</sup> *And Jesus said unto them,  
The sons of this world marry, and are given in marriage : |*
- <sup>35</sup> *but they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world,  
and the resurrection from the dead,  
neither marry, nor are given in marriage :*
- <sup>36</sup> *for neither can they die any more :  
for they are equal unto the angels ;  
and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.*
- <sup>37</sup> *But that the dead are raised,  
even Moses shewed,  
in the place concerning the Bush,  
when he called the Lord*



## § 67. A QUESTION ABOUT

## Mark xii.

- 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?'<sup>a</sup>  
 27 He is not the God of the dead, but of the living: ye do greatly err.

## Mark xii.

- 28 And one of the scribes came, and heard them questioning together, and knowing that he had answered them well, asked him,  
 What commandment is the first of all?  
 29 Jesus answered,  
*The first is, 'Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God, the Lord is one:*  
 30 *and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,'*  
*and with all thy mind, 'and with all thy strength.'*<sup>b</sup>  
 31 The second is this,  
 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.'<sup>c</sup>  
*There is none other commandment greater than these.*  
 32 *And the scribe said unto him, Of a truth, Master, thou hast well said that 'he is one; and there is none other but he':*<sup>d</sup>  
 33 *and 'to love him with all the heart, and with all the 'understanding, 'and with all the strength,' and 'to love his neighbour as himself,' is much more than all 'whole burnt offerings and sacrifices'*<sup>e</sup>.  
 34 *And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly,* he said unto him,  
 Thou art not far from the kingdom of God.  
 And no man after that durst ask him any question.

## Mark xii.

- 35 And Jesus answered and said,  
 as he taught in the temple,  
 How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?  
 36 David himself said in the Holy Spirit,  
 'The Lord said unto my Lord,  
 Sit thou on my right hand,  
 Till I make thine enemies<sup>1</sup> the footstool of thy feet.'<sup>2</sup>  
 37 David himself calleth him Lord;  
 and whence is he his son?  
 And the common people heard him gladly.

## Matt. xxii.

- 32 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?'<sup>a</sup>  
 God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.  
 33 And when the multitudes heard it, they were astonished at his teaching.

## § 68. THE TWO GREAT

## Matt. xxii.

- 34 But the Pharisees, when they heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence,  
 35 gathered themselves together. | And one of them, a lawyer, }  
 asked him a question, tempting him,  
 36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?  
 37 And he said unto him,  
 'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy'<sup>b</sup> mind.  
 38 *This is the great and first commandment.*  
 39 *And a second<sup>2</sup> like unto it is this,*  
 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.'<sup>c</sup>  
 40 *On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, and the prophets.*  
 40 neither durst any man from that day forth }  
 ask him any more questions.

## § 69. A QUESTION ABOUT

## Matt. xxii.

- 41 Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question, saying,  
 42 What think ye of the Christ? whose son is he?  
 They say unto him, The son of David.  
 43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in the Spirit call him Lord, saying,  
 44 'The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Till I put thine enemies underneath thy feet'?<sup>2</sup>  
 45 If David then calleth him Lord, how is he his son?  
 46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions.

<sup>a</sup> Exod. iii. 6.    <sup>b</sup> Deut. vi. 4-5.    <sup>c</sup> Lev. xix. 18.    <sup>d</sup> Deut. iv. 35, vi. 4.    <sup>e</sup> 1 Sam. xv. 22.    <sup>f</sup> Lev. xviii. 5.    <sup>g</sup> Ps. cx. 1.



THE RESURRECTION (*continued*).

Luke xx.

'the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac,  
and the God of Jacob.'<sup>a</sup>

<sup>38</sup> Now he is not the God of the dead, but of the living :  
for all live unto him.

<sup>39</sup> And certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast  
<sup>40</sup> well said. | For they durst not any more ask him any question.

Cf. § 63 B.

## COMMANDMENTS.

Luke x.

<sup>25</sup> And behold, a certain lawyer  
stood up and tempted him, saying,  
Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life ?

<sup>26</sup> And he said unto him,  
What is written in the law ? how readest thou ?

<sup>27</sup> And he answering said,  
'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God  
with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,  
and with all thy strength,'<sup>b</sup> and with all thy mind ;

Cf. § 58.

and 'thy neighbour as thyself.'<sup>c</sup>

<sup>28</sup> And he said unto him, }  
Thou hast answered right : }  
'this do, and thou shalt live.'<sup>d</sup> }

## THE 'SON OF DAVID'.

Luke xx.

<sup>41</sup> And he said unto them,

How say they that the Christ is David's son ?

<sup>42</sup> For David himself saith in the book of Psalms,

'The Lord said unto my Lord,  
Sit thou on my right hand,

<sup>43</sup> Till I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet.'<sup>e</sup>

<sup>44</sup> David therefore calleth him Lord,  
and how is he his son ?

[<sup>40</sup> For they durst not any more ask him any question.]

<sup>1</sup> M. underneath thy feet.<sup>2</sup> M. or is like unto it.

## Mark xii.

<sup>38</sup> And in his teaching he said,

Beware of the scribes,

which desire to walk in long robes,  
and to have salutations in the market-places,  
<sup>39</sup> and chief seats in the synagogues,  
and chief places at feasts:  
<sup>40</sup> they which devour widows' houses,  
and for a pretence make long prayers;  
these shall receive greater condemnation.

## Mark xii.

<sup>41</sup> And he sat down over against the treasury,  
and beheld how the multitude  
cast money into the treasury:  
and many that were rich cast in much.  
<sup>42</sup> And there came a poor widow,  
and she cast in two mites, which make a farthing.  
<sup>43</sup> And he called unto him his disciples,  
and said unto them, Verily I say unto you,  
This poor widow cast in more  
than all they which are casting into the treasury:  
<sup>44</sup> for they all did cast in of their superfluity;  
but she of her want did cast in  
all that she had, even all her living.

## Mark xiii.

A.

<sup>1</sup> And as he went forth out of the temple,

one of his disciples saith unto him,  
Master, behold, what manner of stones,  
and what manner of buildings!

<sup>2</sup> And Jesus said unto him,  
Seest thou these great buildings?  
there shall not be left here one stone upon another,  
which shall not be thrown down.

B.

<sup>3</sup> And as he sat on the mount of Olives  
over against the temple,  
Peter and James and John and Andrew  
asked him privately,

<sup>4</sup> Tell us, when shall these things be?  
and what shall be the sign  
when these things are all about to be accomplished?

<sup>5</sup> And Jesus began to say unto them,  
Take heed that no man lead you astray.

<sup>6</sup> Many shall come in my name,  
saying, I am he;

## § 70. CONDEMNATION OF

Matt. xxiii.

<sup>1</sup> Then spake Jesus to the multitudes and to his disciples,  
saying,

<sup>2</sup> The scribes and Pharisees sit on Moses' seat:

<sup>3</sup> all things therefore whatsoever they bid you, these do and  
observe: but do not ye after their works; for they say, and  
<sup>4</sup> do not. | Yea, they bind heavy burdens<sup>1</sup> and grievous to be  
borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves  
<sup>5</sup> will not move them with their finger. | But all their works  
they do for to be seen of men: for they make broad their  
phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

<sup>6</sup> and love the chief place at feasts,

and the chief seats in the synagogues,

<sup>7</sup> and the salutations in the market-places, }

<sup>8</sup> and to be called of men, Rabbi. | But be not ye called Rabbi:

<sup>9</sup> for one is your teacher, and all ye are brethren. | And call  
no man your father on the earth: for one is your Father,

<sup>10</sup> which is in heaven. | Neither be ye called masters: for one is  
your master, even the Christ.

## § 71. THE WIDOW'S

## § 72. ESCHATOLOGICAL

Matt. xxiv.

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on  
his way;

and his disciples came to him

to shew him

the buildings of the temple.

<sup>2</sup> But he answered and said unto them,

See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you,  
There shall not be left here one stone upon another,  
that shall not be thrown down.

<sup>3</sup> And as he sat on the mount of Olives,

the disciples

came unto him privately, saying,

Tell us, when shall these things be?

and what shall be the sign of thy coming,  
and of the end of the world?

<sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto them,  
Take heed that no man lead you astray.

<sup>5</sup> For many shall come in my name,  
saying, I am the Christ;

## THE SCRIBES.

Luke xx.

<sup>45</sup> And in the hearing of all the people he said unto his disciples,

<sup>46</sup> Beware of the scribes,

Luke xi.

which desire to walk in long robes,  
and love salutations in the market-places,  
and chief seats in the synagogues,  
and chief places at feasts ;

<sup>47</sup> which devour widows' houses,  
and for a pretence make long prayers :  
these shall receive greater condemnation.

<sup>43</sup> Woe unto you Pharisees !  
for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues, }  
and the salutations in the market-places. }

## MITES.

Luke xxi.

<sup>1</sup> And he looked up,  
and saw  
the rich men that were casting }  
their gifts into the treasury. }

<sup>2</sup> And he saw a certain poor widow  
casting in thither two mites.

<sup>3</sup> And he said, Of a truth I say unto you,  
This poor widow cast in more  
than they all :

<sup>4</sup> for all these did of their superfluity cast in unto the gifts :  
but she of her want did cast in  
all the living that she had.

## DISCOURSE.

Luke xxi.

Cf. John viii. 20.

<sup>5</sup> And as some spake of the temple,  
how it was adorned with goodly stones }  
and offerings, }

he said,  
<sup>6</sup> As for these things which ye behold, the days will come  
in which there shall not be left here one stone upon another,  
that shall not be thrown down.

<sup>7</sup> And they asked him, saying,  
Master, when therefore shall these things be ?  
and what shall be the sign  
when these things are about to come to pass ?

<sup>8</sup> And he said,  
Take heed that ye be not led astray :  
for many shall come in my name,  
saying, I am he ; and, The time is at hand :

<sup>1</sup> M. omit and grievous to be borne.

## Mark xiii.

and shall lead many astray.

- <sup>7</sup> And when ye shall hear of wars  
and rumours of wars,  
be not troubled :  
'these things must needs come to pass';<sup>a</sup>  
but the end is not yet.

<sup>8</sup> For 'nation shall rise against nation,  
and kingdom against kingdom':<sup>b</sup>  
there shall be earthquakes in divers places;  
there shall be famines:  
these things are the beginning of travail.

C.

- <sup>9</sup> But take heed to yourselves :  
for they shall deliver you up to councils;  
and in synagogues shall ye be beaten;  
and before governors and kings shall ye stand  
for my sake, for a testimony unto them.  
<sup>10</sup> And the gospel *must first* be preached  
unto all the nations.  
<sup>11</sup> And when they lead you to judgement,  
and deliver you up,  
be not anxious beforehand what ye shall speak:

*but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour,*

*that speak ye:*

for it is not ye that speak,  
but the Holy Ghost.

- <sup>12</sup> And brother shall deliver up brother to death,  
and the father his child;  
and 'children shall rise up against parents',<sup>c</sup>  
and cause them to be put to death.  
<sup>13</sup> And ye shall be hated of all men  
for my name's sake:  
but he that endureth to the end,  
the same shall be saved.

D.

- <sup>14</sup> But when ye see 'the abomination of desolation'<sup>e</sup>  
standing *where he ought not*  
(let him that readeth understand),  
then let them that are in Judaea  
flee into the mountains:  
<sup>15</sup> and let him that is on the housetop  
not go down, *nor enter in*,  
to take *anything* out of his house:  
<sup>16</sup> and let him that is in the field

## Matt. xxiv.

and shall lead many astray.

- <sup>6</sup> And ye shall hear of wars  
and rumours of wars:  
*see that ye be not troubled:*  
for 'these things must needs come to pass';<sup>a</sup>  
but the end is not yet.  
<sup>7</sup> For 'nation shall rise against nation,  
and kingdom against kingdom':<sup>b</sup>  
and there shall be famines and earthquakes }  
in divers places.  
<sup>8</sup> But all these things are the beginning of travail.

<sup>9a</sup> Then shall they deliver you up unto tribulation,  
and shall kill you:

<sup>14</sup> And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached  
in the whole world for a testimony unto all the nations;  
and then shall the end come.

<sup>10</sup> And then 'shall many stumble',<sup>d</sup> and shall deliver up one  
another, and shall hate one another.

<sup>11</sup> And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many  
<sup>12</sup> astray. | And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of  
the many shall wax cold.

<sup>9b</sup> and ye shall be hated of all the nations  
for my name's sake.

<sup>13</sup> But he that endureth to the end,

the same shall be saved.

<sup>15</sup> When therefore ye see 'the abomination of desolation',<sup>e</sup>  
*which was spoken of by Daniel the prophet,*  
standing in the holy place

(let him that readeth understand),  
<sup>16</sup> then let them that are in Judaea  
flee unto the mountains:

<sup>17</sup> let him that is on the housetop  
not go down  
to take out the things that are in his house:  
<sup>18</sup> and let him that is in the field

<sup>a</sup> Dan. ii. 28.

<sup>b</sup> Isa. xix. 2.

<sup>c</sup> Mic. vii. 6.

<sup>d</sup> Dan. xi. 41 (LXX).

<sup>e</sup> Dan. ix. 27, xii. 11.



## DISCOURSE (continued).

## Luke xxi.

## Matt. x.

- go ye not after them.
- <sup>9</sup> And when ye shall hear of wars and tumults, be not terrified : for 'these things must needs come to pass' <sup>a</sup> first ; but the end is not immediately.
- <sup>10</sup> Then said he unto them, 'Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom' : <sup>b</sup>
- <sup>11</sup> and there shall be great earthquakes, and in divers places famines and pestilences ; and there shall be terrors and great signs from heaven.
- <sup>12</sup> But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, bringing you before kings and governors
- <sup>13</sup> for my name's sake. It shall turn unto you for a testimony.
- <sup>14</sup> Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate beforehand how to answer :
- <sup>15</sup> for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to withstand or to gainsay.
- <sup>16</sup> But ye shall be delivered up }  
even by parents, and brethren, }  
and kinsfolk, and friends ; }  
and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.
- <sup>17</sup> And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake.
- <sup>18</sup> And not a hair of your head shall perish.
- <sup>19</sup> In your patience ye shall win your souls.
- <sup>20</sup> But when ye see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that her desolation is at hand.
- <sup>21</sup> Then let them that are in Judaea flee unto the mountains ; and let them that are in the midst of her depart out ; and let not them that are in the country enter therein.

- <sup>17</sup> But beware of men : for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues they will scourge you ;
- <sup>18</sup> yea, and before governors and kings shall ye be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them

and to the Gentiles.

## Luke xii.

- <sup>19</sup> But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what ye shall speak : for it shall be given you in that hour what ye shall speak.
- <sup>20</sup> For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you.
- <sup>21</sup> And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child : and 'children shall rise up against parents',<sup>c</sup> and cause them to be put to death.
- <sup>22</sup> And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake : but he that endureth to the end.

the same shall be saved.

- <sup>11</sup> And when they bring you before the synagogues, and the rulers, and the authorities, be not anxious how or what ye shall answer, or what ye shall say : for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that very hour what ye ought to say.

[Cf. Matt. x.

- <sup>30</sup> . . . but the very hairs of your head are all numbered.

Luke xii.

- <sup>7</sup> . . . but the very hairs of your head are all numbered.]

## Luke xvii.

- <sup>31</sup> In that day, he which shall be on the housetop, and his goods in the house, let him not go down to take them away : and let him that is in the field likewise

## Mark xiii.

not 'return back'<sup>a</sup> to take his cloke.

- <sup>17</sup> But woe unto them that are with child  
and to them that give suck in those days!  
<sup>18</sup> And pray ye that it be not in the winter.

- <sup>19</sup> For *those days* shall be 'tribulation,  
such as there hath not been *the like*  
from the beginning of the creation' *which God created*  
'until now,'<sup>b</sup> and never shall be.  
<sup>20</sup> And except *the Lord* had shortened the days,  
no flesh would have been saved:  
but for the elect's sake, *whom he chose*,  
*he* shortened the days.

- <sup>21</sup> And then if any man shall say unto you,  
Lo, here is the Christ; or Lo, there;  
believe it not:

- <sup>22</sup> for there shall arise false Christs, and 'false prophets,  
and shall shew signs and wonders,'<sup>c</sup>  
*that they may lead astray*, if possible, the elect.  
<sup>23</sup> But take ye heed:  
behold, I have told you *all things* beforehand.

- <sup>24</sup> But in those days, after that tribulation,  
'the sun shall be darkened,  
and the moon shall not give her light,  
<sup>25</sup> and the stars shall be falling from heaven,

and the powers *that are in the heavens* shall be shaken.'<sup>d</sup>

- <sup>26</sup> And then shall they see 'the Son of man  
coming in clouds'<sup>e</sup> with great power and glory.  
<sup>27</sup> And then shall he send forth the angels,  
and 'shall gather together' his elect  
'from the four winds,

## Matt. xxiv.

not 'return back'<sup>a</sup> to take his cloke.

- <sup>19</sup> But woe unto them that are with child  
and to them that give suck in those days!  
<sup>20</sup> And pray ye that *your flight* be not in the winter,  
*neither on a sabbath*:  
<sup>21</sup> for *then* shall be great 'tribulation,  
such as hath not been  
from the beginning of the world  
until now,'<sup>b</sup> no, nor ever shall be.  
<sup>22</sup> And except those days had *been* shortened,  
no flesh would have been saved:  
but for the elect's sake  
those days *shall be* shortened.

- <sup>23</sup> Then if any man shall say unto you,  
Lo, here is the Christ, or, Here;  
believe it not.

- <sup>24</sup> For there shall arise false Christs, and 'false prophets,  
and shall shew *great* signs and wonders';<sup>c</sup>  
*so as to lead astray*, if possible, *even* the elect.

- <sup>25</sup> Behold, I have told you beforehand.

- <sup>26</sup> If therefore they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the  
wilderness; go not forth: Behold, he is in the inner chambers;  
believe it not.

- <sup>27</sup> For as the lightning cometh forth from the east,

and is seen even unto the west;  
so shall be the coming of the Son of man.

- <sup>28</sup> Wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered  
together.

- <sup>29</sup> But *immediately*, after the tribulation of those days,  
'the sun shall be darkened,  
and the moon shall not give her light,  
and the stars shall fall from heaven,

and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken':<sup>d</sup>

- <sup>30</sup> and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven  
and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn,  
and they shall see 'the Son of man  
coming on the clouds of heaven'<sup>e</sup> with power and great glory  
<sup>31</sup> And he shall send forth his angels with a great<sup>1</sup> sound of  
a trumpet,  
and they 'shall gather together' his elect  
'from the four winds,

<sup>a</sup> Gen. xix. 26.

<sup>b</sup> Dan. xii. 1.

<sup>c</sup> Deut. xiii. 1-3.

<sup>d</sup> Isa. xiii. 10, xxxiv. 4.

<sup>e</sup> Dan. vii. 13.

DISCOURSE (*continued*).Luke **xxi.**

<sup>22</sup> *For these are days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.*

<sup>23</sup> *Woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days !*

*for there shall be great distress upon the land, and wrath unto this people.*

<sup>24</sup> *And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all the nations : and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.*

Luke **xvii.**

<sup>3</sup> not 'return back.'<sup>a</sup> Remember Lot's wife.

Luke **xvii.**

<sup>20</sup> *And being asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation :*

<sup>21</sup> *neither shall they say, Lo, here ! or, There ! for lo, the kingdom of God is within you.*

<sup>22</sup> *And he said unto his disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.*

<sup>23</sup> *And they shall say to you, Lo, there ! Lo, here ! go not away, nor follow after them :*

Cf. Matt. xxiv.

<sup>11</sup> *And many false prophets shall arise,*

*and shall lead many astray.*

Luke **xvii.**

<sup>24</sup> *for as the lightning, when it lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven ; so shall the Son of man be<sup>2</sup> in his day.*

<sup>25</sup> *But first must he suffer many things and be rejected of this generation.*

<sup>25</sup> *And there shall be signs in sun and moon and stars ;*

<sup>26</sup> *and upon the earth distress of nations, in perplexity for the roaring of the sea and the billows ; | men fainting for fear, and for expectation of the things which are coming on the world :*

*' for the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.'<sup>d</sup>*

<sup>27</sup> *And then shall they see ' the Son of man coming in a cloud '<sup>e</sup> with power and great glory.*

<sup>28</sup> *But when these things begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads ; because your redemption draweth nigh.*

<sup>1</sup> M. omit sound of a.

<sup>2</sup> M. omit in his day.

## § 72. ESCHATOLOGICAL

## Mark xiii.

from the uttermost part of the earth  
to the uttermost part of heaven.'<sup>a</sup>

<sup>28</sup> Now from the fig tree learn her parable :

when her branch is now become tender,  
and putteth forth its leaves,  
ye know that the summer is nigh ;

<sup>29</sup> even so ye also,  
when ye see these things coming to pass,  
know ye that he is nigh, even at the doors.

<sup>30</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
This generation shall not pass away,  
until all these things be accomplished.

<sup>31</sup> Heaven and earth shall pass away :  
but my words shall not pass away.

<sup>32</sup> But of that day or that hour knoweth no one,  
not even the angels in heaven,  
neither the Son, but the Father.

<sup>33</sup> Take ye heed, watch <sup>1</sup> and pray :  
for ye know not when the time is.

<sup>34</sup> It is as when a man,  
sojourning in another country,  
having left his house,  
and given authority to his servants,  
to each one his work, commanded also the porter to watch. |

<sup>35</sup> Watch therefore : for ye know not when the Lord of the  
house cometh, whether at even, or at midnight, or at cock-

<sup>36</sup> crowing, or in the morning ; | lest coming suddenly he find

<sup>37</sup> you sleeping. | And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

## Mark xiv.

<sup>1</sup> Now after two days was the feast of the passover  
and the unleavened bread :

and the chief priests and the scribes

## Matt. xxiv.

from one end of heaven }  
to the other.'<sup>a</sup>

<sup>32</sup> Now from the fig tree learn her parable :

when her branch is now become tender,  
and putteth forth its leaves,  
ye know that the summer is nigh ;

<sup>33</sup> even so ye also,  
when ye see *all* these things,  
know ye that he is nigh, even at the doors.

<sup>34</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
This generation shall not pass away,  
till all these things be accomplished.

<sup>35</sup> Heaven and earth shall pass away,  
but my words shall not pass away.

<sup>36</sup> But of that day and hour knoweth no one,  
not even the angels of heaven,  
<sup>2</sup> neither the Son, but the Father only.

<sup>37</sup> And as *were* the days of Noah,  
so shall be the coming of the Son of man.

<sup>38</sup> For as in those days which were before the flood  
they were eating and drinking,

marrying and giving in marriage,  
<sup>39</sup> until the day that Noah entered into the ark,  
and they knew not until the flood came,  
and took them all away ;

so shall be  
the coming of the Son of man

<sup>40</sup> Then shall two men be in the field ; one is taken, and one is

<sup>41</sup> left : | two women shall be grinding at the mill ; one is taken,  
and one is left.

<sup>42</sup> Watch therefore :  
for ye know not on what day your Lord cometh.

## § 73. THE PRIESTS

## Matt. xxvi.

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these words-

<sup>2</sup> he said unto his disciples, | Ye know that  
after two days the passover cometh,

and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified.

<sup>3</sup> Then were gathered together the chief priests,

<sup>a</sup> Zech. ii. 6 ; Deut. xxx. 4.



DISCOURSE (*continued*).

## Luke xxi.

- <sup>29</sup> And he spake to them a parable : Behold the fig tree, and all the trees :  
<sup>30</sup> when they now shoot forth, ye see it and know of your own selves } that the summer is now nigh.  
<sup>31</sup> Even so ye also, when ye see these things coming to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh.  
<sup>32</sup> Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all things be accomplished.  
<sup>33</sup> Heaven and earth shall pass away : but my words shall not pass away.  
<sup>34</sup> But take heed to yourselves, lest haply your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and that day come on you suddenly as a snare : | for so shall it come upon all them that dwell on the face of all the earth.

## Luke xvii.

- <sup>26</sup> And as it came to pass in the days of Noah, even so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.  
<sup>27</sup> They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all.  
<sup>28</sup> Likewise even as it came to pass in the days of Lot ; they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded ; | but in the day that Lot went out from Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all :  
<sup>30</sup> After the same manner shall it be in the day that the Son of man is revealed.

## Matt. xxv.

- <sup>13</sup> Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour.

## Matt. xxv.

- <sup>14</sup> For it is as when a man, going into another country,

called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods . . .

## Luke xix.

- <sup>12</sup> A certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.  
<sup>13</sup> And he called ten servants of his, and gave them ten pounds . . .

## PLOT.

## Luke xxii.

- <sup>1</sup> Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh } which is called the Passover.

- <sup>2</sup> And the chief priests and the scribes

<sup>1</sup> M. omit and pray.

<sup>2</sup> M. omit neither the son.

## § 73. THE PRIESTS'

## Mark xiv.

- sought how they might take him  
with subtilty, and kill him :  
<sup>2</sup> for they said, Not during the feast,  
lest haply there shall be a tumult of the people.

## Matt. xxvi.

- and the elders of the people, unto the court of the high priest,  
who was called Caiaphas ;  
<sup>4</sup> and they took counsel together that they might take Jesus  
by subtilty, and kill him.  
<sup>5</sup> But they said, Not during the feast,  
lest a tumult arise among the people.

## § 74. THE ANOINTING

## Mark xiv.

- <sup>3</sup> And while he was in Bethany  
in the house of Simon the leper,  
as he sat at meat,  
there came a woman  
having an alabaster cruse  
of ointment of spikenard very costly ;  
and she brake the cruse,  
and poured it over his head.  
<sup>4</sup> But there were some that had indignation  
among themselves, saying,  
To what purpose hath this waste  
of the ointment been made ?  
<sup>5</sup> For this ointment might have been sold  
for above three hundred pence,  
and given to the poor.  
And they murmured against her.  
<sup>6</sup> But Jesus said, Let her alone ;  
why trouble ye her ?  
she hath wrought a good work on me.  
<sup>7</sup> For ye have the poor always with you,  
and whensoever ye will ye can do them good :  
but me ye have not always.  
<sup>8</sup> She hath done what she could :  
she hath anointed my body aforehand  
for the burying.  
<sup>9</sup> And verily I say unto you,  
Whosoever the gospel shall be preached  
throughout the whole world,  
that also which this woman hath done  
shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

## Matt. xxvi.

- <sup>6</sup> Now when Jesus was in Bethany,  
in the house of Simon the leper,  
<sup>7a</sup> as he sat at meat.  
<sup>7a</sup> there came unto him a woman  
having an alabaster cruse  
of exceeding precious ointment,  
  
and she poured it upon his head,  
<sup>8</sup> But when the disciples saw it, they had indignation,  
saying,  
To what purpose is this waste ?  
  
<sup>9</sup> For this ointment might have been sold  
for much,  
and given to the poor.  
  
<sup>10</sup> But Jesus perceiving it said unto them,  
Why trouble ye the woman ?  
for she hath wrought a good work upon me.  
<sup>11</sup> For ye have the poor always with you ;  
  
but me ye have not always.  
<sup>12</sup> For in that she poured this ointment  
upon my body, she did it to prepare me }  
for burial.  
<sup>13</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
Whosoever this gospel shall be preached  
in the whole world,  
that also which this woman hath done  
shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

## § 75. THE TREACHERY

## Mark xiv.

- <sup>10</sup> And Judas Iscariot,  
he that was one <sup>a</sup> of the twelve,  
went away unto the chief priests,  
that he might deliver him unto them.  
<sup>11</sup> And they, when they heard it, were glad,  
and promised to give him money.  
And he sought how he might conveniently  
deliver him unto them.

## Matt. xxvi.

- <sup>14</sup> Then one <sup>a</sup> of the twelve, }  
who was called Judas Iscariot, }  
went unto the chief priests,  
<sup>15</sup> and said, What are ye willing to give me,  
and I will deliver him unto you ?  
And they weighed unto him thirty pieces of silver.  
<sup>16</sup> And from that time he sought opportunity  
to deliver him unto them.

<sup>a</sup> δ εἰς, Mark ; εἰς, Matt.

PLOT (*continued*).

Luke xxii.

sought how they might  
*put him to death;*

*for they feared the people.*

## AT BETHANY.

[Cf. Luke vii.]

<sup>36</sup> And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and  
<sup>37</sup> sat down to meat. | And behold, a woman which was in the city, a sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting at meat in the Pharisee's house, she brought an alabaster  
<sup>38</sup> cruse of ointment, | and standing behind at his feet, weeping, she began to wet his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head, and kissed his  
<sup>39</sup> feet, and anointed them with the ointment. | Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman  
<sup>40</sup> this is which toucheth him, that she is a sinner. | And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat  
<sup>41</sup> to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. | A certain lender had two debtors: the one owed five hundred  
<sup>42</sup> pence, and the other fifty. | When they had not *wherewith* to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them therefore  
<sup>43</sup> will love him most? | Simon answered and said, He, I suppose, to whom he forgave the most. And he said  
<sup>44</sup> unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. | And turning to the woman, he said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath wetted my feet with her tears, and  
<sup>45</sup> wiped them with her hair. | Thou gavest me no kiss: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss  
<sup>46</sup> my feet. | My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but  
<sup>47</sup> she hath anointed my feet with ointment. | Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the*  
<sup>48</sup> *same* loveth little. | And he said unto her, Thy sins are  
<sup>49</sup> forgiven. | And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth  
<sup>50</sup> sins? | And he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.]

Cf. John xii. 1-8.

## OF JUDAS.

Luke xxii.

- <sup>3</sup> And Satan entered into Judas who was called Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.  
<sup>4</sup> And he went away, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might deliver him unto them.  
<sup>5</sup> And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.  
<sup>6</sup> And he consented, and sought opportunity to deliver him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

## Mark xiv.

- 12 And on the first day of unleavened bread,  
when they sacrificed the passover,  
his disciples say unto him,  
Where wilt thou that we go and make ready  
that thou mayest eat the passover?
- 13 And he sendeth two of his disciples,  
  
and saith unto them, Go into the city,  
and there shall meet you a man  
bearing a pitcher of water: follow him;  
14 and wheresoever he shall enter in,  
say to the goodman of the house,  
The Master saith, Where is my guest-chamber,  
where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?  
15 And he will himself shew you a large upper room  
furnished and ready:  
and there make ready for us.
- 16 And the disciples went forth, and came into the city,  
and found as he had said unto them:  
and they made ready the passover.
- 17 And when it was evening  
he cometh with the twelve.
- 18 And as they sat and were eating,  
Jesus said, Verily I say unto you,  
One of you shall betray me,  
'even he that eateth with me.'<sup>a</sup>
- 19 And they began to be sorrowful,  
and to say unto him one by one, Is it I?
- 20 And he said unto them,  
It is one of the twelve,  
he that dippeth with me in the dish.
- 21 For the Son of man goeth,  
even as it is written of him:  
but woe unto that man  
through whom the Son of man is betrayed  
good were it for that man  
if he had not been born.
- 22 And as they were eating,  
he took bread,  
  
and when he had blessed, he brake it,  
and gave to them,  
and said, Take ye:  
this is my body.
- 23 And he took a cup,  
and when he had given thanks,  
he gave to them;  
and they all drank of it.
- 24 And he said unto them,  
This is my 'blood of the<sup>1</sup> covenant',<sup>b</sup>  
which is shed for many.
- 25 Verily I say unto you,  
I will no more drink of the fruit of the vine,  
until that day when I drink it new  
in the kingdom of heaven.
- 26 And when they had sung a hymn,  
they went out unto the mount of Olives.

## Matt. xxvi.

- 17 Now on the first day of unleavened bread  
  
the disciples came to Jesus, saying,  
Where wilt thou that we make ready  
for thee to eat the passover?
- 18 And he said, Go into the city  
  
to such a man, and say unto him,  
The Master saith, My time is at hand;  
I keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.
- 19 And the disciples  
did as Jesus appointed them;  
and they made ready the passover.
- 20 Now when even was come,  
he was sitting at meat with the twelve<sup>2</sup> disciples; }
- 21 and as they were eating,  
he said, Verily I say unto you,  
that one of you shall betray me.
- 22 And they were exceeding sorrowful,  
and began to say unto him every one, Is it I, Lord?
- 23 And he answered and said,  
  
He that dipped his hand with me in the dish,  
the same shall betray me,
- 24 The Son of man goeth,  
even as it is written of him:  
but woe unto that man  
through whom the Son of man is betrayed!  
good were it for that man  
if he had not been born.
- 25 And Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Is it I,  
Rabbi? He saith unto him, Thou hast said.
- 26 And as they were eating,  
Jesus took bread,  
  
and blessed, and brake it;  
and he gave to the disciples,  
and said, Take, eat;  
this is my body.
- 27 And he took<sup>3</sup> a cup,  
and gave thanks,  
and gave to them, saying,  
28 Drink ye all of it;  
  
for this is my 'blood of the<sup>1</sup> covenant',<sup>b</sup>  
which is shed for many unto remission of sins.
- 29 But I say unto you,  
I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine,  
until that day when I drink it new  
with you in my Father's kingdom.
- 30 And when they had sung a hymn,  
they went out unto the mount of Olives.

<sup>a</sup> Ps. xli. 10<sup>b</sup> Exod. xxiv. 8.



## SUPPER.

## Luke xxii.

- <sup>7</sup> And the day of unleavened bread came,  
on which the passover *must be* sacrificed.
- <sup>9</sup> And they said unto him,  
Where wilt thou that we make ready?
- <sup>8</sup> And he sent *Peter and John*, saying,  
Go and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat.
- <sup>10</sup> And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city,  
there shall meet you a man  
bearing a pitcher of water; follow him  
into the house whereinto he goeth.
- <sup>11</sup> And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house,  
The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber,  
where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?
- <sup>12</sup> And he will show you a large upper room  
furnished:  
there make ready.
- <sup>13</sup> And they went,  
and found as he had said unto them:  
and they made ready the passover.
- <sup>14</sup> And when the hour was come,  
he sat down, and the apostles with him. }
- <sup>15</sup> And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this  
<sup>16</sup> passover with you before I suffer: } for I say unto you, I will  
not eat it, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.
- <sup>21</sup> But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me }  
is with me on the table. }
- <sup>22</sup> For the Son of man indeed goeth,  
as it hath been determined:  
but woe unto that man  
through whom he is betrayed!
- <sup>23</sup> And they began to question among themselves, which of them  
it was that should do this thing.
- <sup>19</sup> And he took bread,  
and when he had given thanks, he brake it,  
and gave to them,  
saying,  
This is my body<sup>4</sup> which is given for you:  
this do in remembrance of me.
- <sup>17</sup> And he received a cup,  
and when he had given thanks,  
he said, Take this  
and divide it among yourselves:
- <sup>20</sup> And the cup in like manner after supper, saying,  
This cup is the new covenant in my blood,  
even that<sup>5</sup> which is poured out for you.
- <sup>18</sup> for I say unto you,  
I will not drink from henceforth of the fruit of the vine,  
until  
the kingdom of God shall come.
- <sup>32</sup> And he came out, and went, as his custom was, }  
unto the mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him. }

Cf. 1 Cor. xi.

<sup>23</sup> For I received of the Lord that which also  
I delivered unto you, how that  
the Lord Jesus in the night in which he was betrayed  
took bread;

<sup>24</sup> and when he had given thanks, he brake it,

and said,  
This is my body, which is for you:  
this do in remembrance of me.

<sup>25</sup> In like manner also the cup, after supper, saying,  
This cup is the new covenant in my blood:  
this do, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

<sup>1</sup> M. add new.    <sup>2</sup> M. omit disciples.    <sup>3</sup> M. the cup.    <sup>4</sup> M. omit which is given for you.    <sup>5</sup> M. omit which is poured out for you.

## § 77. PREDICTION OF

## Mark xiv.

- 27 And Jesus saith unto them,  
All ye shall be offended :  
for it is written, 'I will smite the shepherd,  
and the sheep shall be scattered abroad.' <sup>a</sup>
- 28 Howbeit, after I am raised up,  
I will go before you into Galilee.
- 29 But Peter said unto him,  
Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.
- 30 And Jesus saith unto him,  
Verily I say unto thee,  
that thou to-day, *even* this night,  
before the cock crow *twice*,  
shalt deny me thrice.
- 31 But he *spake exceeding vehemently*,  
If I must die with thee, I will not deny thee.  
And in like manner also said *they* all.

## Mark xiv.

- 32 And they come unto a place  
which was named Gethsemane :  
and he saith unto his disciples,  
Sit ye here, while I pray.
- 33 And he taketh with him Peter and James and John,  
and began to be *greatly amazed*,  
and sore troubled.
- 34 And he saith unto them,  
My soul is exceeding sorrowful even unto death :  
abide ye here, and watch.
- 35 And he went forward a little,  
and fell *on the ground*,  
and prayed *that, if it were possible,*  
*the hour might pass away from him.*
- 36 And he said, Abba, Father  
*all things are possible unto thee ;*  
remove this cup from me :  
howbeit not *what* I will, but *what* thou wilt.

- 37 And he cometh,  
and findeth them sleeping,  
and saith unto Peter,  
*Simon, sleepest thou ?*  
couldst thou not watch one hour ?
- 38 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation :  
the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.
- 39 And again he went away, and prayed,  
saying *the same words.*
- 40 And again he came, and found them sleeping,  
for their eyes were very heavy ;  
*and they wist not what to answer him.*
- 41 And he cometh the third time,  
and saith unto them,  
Sleep on now, and take your rest :  
*it is enough ; the hour is come ;*  
behold, the Son of man is betrayed  
into the hands of sinners.
- 42 Arise, let us be going :  
behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

## Matt. xxvi.

- 31 Then saith Jesus unto them,  
All ye shall be offended *in me this night* :  
for it is written, 'I will smite the shepherd,  
and the sheep' *of the flock* 'shall be scattered abroad.' <sup>a</sup>
- 32 But after I am raised up,  
I will go before you into Galilee.
- 33 But Peter answered and said unto him,  
If all shall be offended *in thee*, I will *never* be offended.
- 34 Jesus said unto him,  
Verily I say unto thee,  
that this night,  
before the cock crow,  
thou shalt deny me thrice.
- 35 Peter saith unto him,  
*Even* if I must die with thee, yet will I not deny thee.  
Likewise also said *all the disciples.*

## § 78.

## Matt. xxvi.

- 36 Then cometh Jesus *with* them unto a place  
called Gethsemane,  
and saith unto his disciples,  
Sit ye here, while I go *yonder* and pray.
- 37 And he took with him Peter and *the two sons of Zebedee*,  
and began to be sorrowful  
and sore troubled.
- 38 Then saith he unto them,  
My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death :  
abide ye here, and watch *with me.*
- 39 And he went forward a little,  
and fell *on his face*,  
and prayed,
- saying, *O my Father,*  
*if it be possible,*  
*let this cup pass away from me :*  
nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

- 40 And he cometh unto the disciples,  
and findeth them sleeping,  
and saith unto Peter,  
  
*What, could ye not watch with me one hour ?*
- 41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation :  
the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.
- 42 Again *a second time* he went away, and prayed,  
saying, *O my Father, if this cannot pass away*  
*except I drink it, thy will be done.*
- 43 And he came again, and found them sleeping,  
for their eyes were heavy.
- 44 *And he left them again, and went away,*  
*and prayed a third time, saying again the same words.* }
- 45 Then cometh he *to the disciples*,  
and saith unto them,  
Sleep on now, and take your rest :  
behold, the hour is at hand,  
and the Son of man is betrayed }  
unto the hands of sinners.
- 46 Arise, let us be going :  
behold, he is at hand that betrayeth me.

<sup>a</sup> Zech. xiii. 7.

## ST. PETER'S DENIAL.

Luke xxii.

<sup>31</sup> Simon, Simon, behold, Satan asked to have you, that he  
<sup>32</sup> might sift you as wheat : | but I made supplication for thee,  
 that thy faith fail not : and do thou, when once thou hast  
 turned again, stablish thy brethren.

<sup>33</sup> And he said unto him,  
*Lord, I am ready to go both to prison and to death.*

<sup>34</sup> And he said,  
 I tell thee, Peter,  
 the cock shall not crow this day, }  
 until thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

## GETHSEMANE.

Luke xxii.

<sup>39</sup> And he came out, and went, as his custom was,  
 unto the mount of Olives ; and the disciples also followed him. }  
<sup>40</sup> And when he was at the place, he said unto them,  
 Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

<sup>41</sup> And he was parted from them about a stone's cast ;  
 and he kneeled down  
 and prayed,

<sup>42</sup> saying, Father,  
 if thou be willing,  
 remove this cup from me :  
 nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.

<sup>1 43</sup> And there appeared unto him an angel from heaven,  
<sup>44</sup> strengthening him. | And being in an agony he prayed more  
 earnestly : and his sweat became as it were great drops of  
 blood falling down upon the ground.

<sup>45</sup> And when he rose up from his prayer, he came unto the disciples,  
 and found them sleeping for sorrow,

<sup>46</sup> and said unto them,  
*Why sleep ye ?*

*rise and pray, that ye enter not into temptation.*

[<sup>40b</sup> Pray that ye enter not into temptation.]

<sup>1</sup> M. omit verses 43, 44.



## Mark xiv.

- <sup>43</sup> And *straightway*, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests *and the scribes* and the elders.
- <sup>44</sup> Now he that betrayed him had given them a *token*, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he; take him, *and lead him away safely*.
- <sup>45</sup> And *when he was come*, straightway he came to him, and saith, Rabbi; and kissed him.
- <sup>46</sup> And they laid hands on him, and took him.
- <sup>47</sup> But a certain one of them that *stood by* drew his sword, and smote the servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear.
- <sup>48</sup> And Jesus *answered* and said unto them,
- Are ye come out, as against a robber, with swords and staves to seize me?
- <sup>49</sup> I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not: but this is *done* that the scriptures might be fulfilled.
- <sup>50</sup> And *they* all left him, and fled.
- <sup>51</sup> And a certain young man followed with him, having a linen cloth cast about him, over his naked body: and they lay hold
- <sup>52</sup> on him; | but he left the linen cloth, and fled naked.

## Mark xiv.

- <sup>53</sup> And they led Jesus away to the high priest: and *there come together with him* all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.
- <sup>54</sup> And Peter had followed him afar off, *even within*, into the court of the high priest; and he was sitting with the officers, and warming himself in the light of the fire.
- <sup>55</sup> Now the chief priests and the whole council sought witness against Jesus to put him to death; and found it not.
- <sup>56</sup> For many bare false witness against him, and their witness agreed not together.
- <sup>57</sup> And there stood up certain, and bare false witness against him, saying,
- <sup>58</sup> We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and in three days I will build another made without hands.

## Matt. xxvi.

- <sup>47</sup> And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a *great* multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the *people*.
- <sup>48</sup> Now he that betrayed him gave them a *sign*, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he: take him.
- <sup>49</sup> And straightway he came to Jesus, and said, *Hail*, Rabbi; and kissed him.
- <sup>50</sup> And Jesus said, *Friend*, do that for which thou art come. Then they *came* and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.
- <sup>51</sup> And behold, one of them that were with Jesus *stretched out his hand*, and drew his sword, and smote the servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear.
- <sup>52</sup> Then saith Jesus unto him, *Put up again thy sword into its place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the*
- <sup>53</sup> *sword. | Or thinkest thou that I cannot beseech my Father, and he shall even now send me more than twelve legions of*
- <sup>54</sup> *angels? | How then should the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?*
- <sup>55</sup> In that hour said Jesus to the multitudes,
- Are ye come out as against a robber with swords and staves to seize me? I sat daily in the temple preaching, and ye took me not.
- <sup>56</sup> But *all this is come to pass*, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples left him, and fled.

## § 80. THE TRIAL

## Matt. xxvi.

- <sup>57</sup> And they that had taken Jesus led him away to the house of Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders } were gathered together.
- <sup>58</sup> But Peter followed him afar off, unto the court of the high priest, and entered in, and sat with the officers, to see the end.
- <sup>59</sup> Now the chief priests and the whole council sought false witness against Jesus, that they might put him to death;
- <sup>60</sup> and they found it not, though many false witnesses came.
- But afterwards came two, and said,
- <sup>61</sup> This man said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.



## BETRAYAL

## Luke xxii.

<sup>47</sup> While he yet spake,  
 behold, a multitude, and *he that was called Judas,* }  
*one of the twelve, went before them;*

and  
 he *drew near* unto Jesus  
 to kiss him.  
<sup>48</sup> But Jesus said unto him, *Judas,*  
*betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?*

<sup>49</sup> *And when they that were about him saw what would follow,* }  
*they said, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?*  
<sup>50</sup> And a certain one of them

smote the servant of the high priest,  
 and struck off his *right ear*.  
<sup>51</sup> But Jesus answered and said, *Suffer ye thus far.*  
*And he touched his ear, and healed him.*

<sup>52</sup> And Jesus said unto the *chief priests, and captains of the temple, and elders,*  
*which were come against him,*  
*Are ye come out, as against a robber,*  
*with swords and staves?*  
<sup>53</sup> When I was daily with you in the temple,  
*ye stretched not forth your hands against me:*  
*but this is your hour,*  
*and the power of darkness.*

## BEFORE CAIAPHAS.

## Luke xxii.

<sup>54</sup> And they *seized him,* and led him away,  
 and brought him into the high priest's house.

But Peter followed afar off.  
<sup>55</sup> *And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the court,* }  
*and had sat down together,*  
*Peter sat in the midst of them.*

## Mark xiv.

## Matt. xxvi.

<sup>59</sup> And not even so did their witness agree together.

<sup>60</sup> And the high priest stood up in the midst,  
and asked Jesus, saying,  
Answerest thou nothing?

<sup>61</sup> But he held his peace, and answered nothing.  
Again the high priest asked him, and saith unto him,

Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?

<sup>62</sup> And Jesus said, *I am* :  
and ye shall see 'the Son of man

sitting at the right hand of power,  
and coming with the clouds of heaven.'<sup>a</sup>

<sup>63</sup> And the high priest rent his clothes,  
and saith,  
What further need have we of witnesses?

<sup>64</sup> Ye have heard the blasphemy :  
what think ye?  
And they all condemned him to be worthy of death.

<sup>65</sup> And some began to spit on him,  
and to cover his face,  
and to buffet him,  
and to say unto him, Prophecy :  
and the officers received him with blows of their hands.

## Mark xiv.

<sup>66</sup> And as Peter was beneath in the court,

there cometh one of the maids of the high priest ;

<sup>67</sup> and seeing Peter warming himself,  
she looked upon him, and saith,  
Thou also wast with the Nazarene, even Jesus.

<sup>68</sup> But he denied, saying, I neither know  
nor understand what thou sayest :  
and he went out into the porch ;  
<sup>1</sup> and the cock crew.

<sup>69</sup> And the maid saw him,  
and began again to say to them that stood by,  
This is one of them.  
But he again denied it.

<sup>70</sup> And after a little while again  
they that stood by said to Peter,  
Of a truth thou art one of them ;  
for thou art a Galilaean.

<sup>71</sup> But he began to curse, and to swear,  
I know not this man of whom ye speak.

<sup>72</sup> And straightway the second time the cock crew.

And Peter called to mind the word,  
how that Jesus said unto him,  
Before the cock crow twice,  
thou shalt deny me thrice.

<sup>2</sup> And when he thought thereon, he wept.

<sup>a</sup> Dan. vii. 13.

<sup>62</sup> And the high priest stood up,  
and said unto him,  
Answerest thou nothing?  
what is it which these witness against thee?

<sup>63</sup> But Jesus held his peace.

And the high priest said unto him,  
*I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us  
whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.*

<sup>64</sup> Jesus saith unto him, *Thou hast said* :  
*nevertheless I say unto you, Henceforth ye shall see 'the  
Son of man*

sitting at the right hand of power,  
and coming on the clouds of heaven.'<sup>a</sup>

<sup>65</sup> Then the high priest rent his garments,  
saying, *He hath spoken blasphemy* :  
what further need have we of witnesses?

*behold, now ye have heard the blasphemy :*  
<sup>66</sup> what think ye?

They answered and said, *He is worthy of death.*

<sup>67</sup> Then did they spit in his face }

and buffet him :

and some smote him with the palms of their hands, saying, }

<sup>68</sup> Prophecy unto us, thou Christ : who is he that struck thee ? }

## Matt. xxvi.

<sup>69</sup> Now Peter was sitting without in the court :

and a maid came unto him,

saying,

Thou also wast with Jesus the Galilaean.

<sup>70</sup> But he denied before them all, saying, I know not  
what thou sayest.

<sup>71</sup> And when he was gone out into the porch,

another<sup>b</sup> maid saw him,

and saith unto them that were there,

This man also was with Jesus the Nazarene.

<sup>72</sup> And again he denied with an oath, I know not the man.

<sup>73</sup> And after a little while

they that stood by came and said to Peter,  
Of a truth thou also art one of them ;  
for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

<sup>74</sup> Then began he to curse and to swear,  
I know not the man.

And straightway the cock crew.

<sup>75</sup> And Peter remembered the word  
which Jesus had said,  
Before the cock crow,  
thou shalt deny me thrice.  
And he went out, and wept bitterly.

<sup>b</sup> ἄλλῃ, Matt. : ἑτέρος, Luke.

BEFORE CAIAPHAS (*continued*).

## Luke xxii.

<sup>67</sup> If thou art the Christ, tell us.  
But he said unto them . . .

<sup>69</sup> But from henceforth shall the Son of man

be seated at the right hand of *the* power of God.

<sup>70</sup> *And they all said,*  
Art thou then the Son of God?  
And he said unto them, *Ye say that I am.*

<sup>71</sup> *And they said,* What further need have we of witness?  
for we ourselves have heard *from his own mouth.*

## DENIAL.

## Luke xxii.

<sup>56</sup> And a *certain* maid seeing him  
as he sat *in the light of the fire,*  
and looking *stedfastly* upon him, }  
said,

*This man also was with him.*

<sup>57</sup> But he denied, saying, *Woman,* I know *him* not.

<sup>58</sup> And *after a little while* another<sup>b</sup> saw him,  
and said,  
*Thou also art one of them.*  
But Peter said, *Man, I am not.*

<sup>59</sup> And *after the space of about one hour*  
another confidently affirmed, saying,  
Of a truth *this man also was with him :*  
for he is a Galilaean.

<sup>60</sup> But Peter said,  
Man, I know not *what thou sayest.*  
And *immediately, while he yet spake,* the cock crew.

<sup>61</sup> *And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter.*  
And Peter remembered the word of the Lord,  
how that he said unto him,  
Before the cock crow *this day,*  
thou shalt deny me thrice.

<sup>62</sup> And he went out, and wept bitterly.

<sup>1</sup> M. omit and the cock crew.

<sup>2</sup> M. or And he began to weep.

## Mark xv.

<sup>1</sup> And *straightway* in the morning  
the chief priests with the elders and scribes,  
and *the whole council*,  
held a consultation,

and bound Jesus, and *carried* him away,  
and delivered him up to Pilate.

<sup>2</sup> And Pilate asked him,  
Art thou the King of the Jews ?  
And he answering saith unto him,  
Thou sayest.  
<sup>3</sup> And the chief priests accused him of many things.

<sup>4</sup> And Pilate again asked him, saying,  
Answerest thou nothing ?  
*behold* how many things they *accuse* thee of.  
<sup>5</sup> But Jesus *no more* answered anything ;  
insomuch that Pilate marvelled.

<sup>6</sup> Now at the feast  
he used to release unto *them* one prisoner,

whom they asked of him.

<sup>7</sup> And *there was* one called Barabbas,

*lying bound with them that had made insurrection,  
men who in the insurrection had committed murder.*

<sup>8</sup> And the multitude went up,  
and began to ask him to do  
as he was wont to do unto them.

<sup>9</sup> And Pilate answered them, saying,  
Will ye that I release unto you  
the King of the Jews ?  
for he perceived that for envy they had delivered him up.

<sup>11</sup> But the chief priests stirred up the multitude  
that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

<sup>12</sup> And Pilate again answered and said unto them,

What then shall I do unto him  
whom ye call the King of the Jews.

<sup>13</sup> And they cried out again, Crucify him.

<sup>14</sup> And Pilate said unto them,  
Why, what evil hath he done ?

But they cried out exceedingly,  
Crucify him.

## Matt. xxvii.

<sup>1</sup> Now when morning was come,  
all the chief priests and the elders of the people  
took counsel against Jesus to put him to death :

<sup>2</sup> and they bound him, and led him away,  
and delivered him up to Pilate the governor.

<sup>11</sup> Now Jesus stood before the governor :  
and the governor asked him, saying,  
Art thou the King of the Jews ?  
And Jesus said unto him,  
Thou sayest.

<sup>12</sup> And when he was accused by the chief priests  
and elders, he answered nothing. }

<sup>13</sup> Then saith Pilate unto him,

*Hearst thou not how many things they witness against thee ?*

<sup>14</sup> And he gave him no answer, not even to one word :  
insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

<sup>15</sup> Now at the feast  
the governor was wont to release unto the multitude one  
prisoner,  
whom they would.

<sup>16</sup> And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

<sup>17</sup> When therefore they were gathered together,

Pilate said unto them,  
Whom will ye that I release unto you ?  
Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ ?

<sup>18</sup> For he knew that for envy they had delivered him up.

<sup>19</sup> And while he was sitting on the judgement-seat, his wife sent  
unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that righteous  
man : for I have suffered many things this day in a dream  
because of him.

<sup>20</sup> Now the chief priests and the elders persuaded the multitudes  
that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

<sup>21</sup> But the governor answered and said unto them,  
Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you ?

<sup>22</sup> And they said, Barabbas. Pilate saith unto them,  
What then shall I do unto Jesus  
which is called Christ ?

They all say, Let him be crucified.

<sup>23</sup> And he said,  
Why, what evil hath he done ?

But they cried out exceedingly, saying,  
Let him be crucified.

<sup>24</sup> So when Pilate saw that he prevailed nothing, but rather that  
a tumult was arising, he took water, and washed his hands



## BEFORE PILATE.

Luke xxii, xxiii.

- <sup>66</sup> And as soon as it was day,  
the assembly of the elders of the people was gathered together, }  
both chief priests and scribes ;
- <sup>67</sup> and they led him away into their council, saying, | If thou  
art the Christ, tell us. But he said unto them, If I tell  
<sup>68</sup> you, ye will not believe : | and if I ask you, ye will not answer. |
- <sup>69</sup> But from henceforth shall the Son of man be seated at the  
<sup>70</sup> right hand of the power of God. | And they all said, Art  
thou then the Son of God ? And he said unto them, Ye say  
<sup>71</sup> that I am. | And they said, What further need have we of  
witness ? for we ourselves have heard from his own mouth.
- xxiii. <sup>1</sup> And the whole company of them rose up,  
and brought him before Pilate.
- <sup>2</sup> And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this man  
perverting our nation, and forbidding to give tribute to  
Caesar, and saying that he himself is Christ a king.
- <sup>3</sup> And Pilate asked him, saying,  
Art thou the King of the Jews ?  
And he answered him and said,  
Thou sayest.

- |  |                   |   |
|--|-------------------|---|
| <p><sup>18</sup> But they cried out all together, saying, Away with this man,<br/>and release unto us Barabbas :</p> <p><sup>19</sup> one who for a certain insurrection made in the city,<br/>and for murder, was cast into prison.</p> | <p>}</p> <p>}</p> | <p><sup>25a</sup> And he released him<br/>that for insurrection and murder<br/>had been cast into prison, . . . }</p> |
|--|-------------------|---|

- <sup>20</sup> And Pilate spake unto them again,  
desiring to release Jesus ;
- <sup>21</sup> but they shouted, saying, Crucify, crucify him.
- <sup>22</sup> And he said unto them the third time,  
Why, what evil hath this man done ?  
I have found no cause of death in him :  
I will therefore chastise him and release him.
- <sup>23</sup> But they were instant with loud voices,  
asking that he might be crucified.  
And their voices prevailed.
- <sup>24</sup> And Pilate gave sentence,

## § 82. THE TRIAL

## Mark xv.

- 15 And Pilate, wishing to content the multitude, released unto them Barabbas,

and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

## Mark xv.

- A. 16 And the soldiers led him away within the court, which is the <sup>1</sup> Praetorium; and they call together the whole band.  
17 And they clothe him with purple, and plaiting a crown of thorns, they put it on him;

- 18 and they began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews!  
19 And they smote his head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees worshipped him.

B.

- 20 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the purple, and put on him his garments.

And they lead him out to crucify him.

- 21 And they compel one passing by, Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go with them, that he might bear his cross.

C.

- 22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull.  
23 And they offered him 'wine mingled with myrrh':<sup>a</sup> but he received it not.  
24 And they crucify him,

and 'part his garments among them casting lots upon'<sup>b</sup> them, what each should take.

- 25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.  
26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, The King of the Jews.  
27 And with him they crucify two robbers; one on his right hand, and one on his left.<sup>2</sup>

D.

- 29 And they that passed by railed on him, 'wagging their heads,'<sup>c</sup> and saying, Ha! thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days,  
30 save thyself, and come down from the cross.  
31 In like manner also the chief priests mocking him among themselves

## Matt. xxvii.

before the multitude, saying, I am innocent<sup>3</sup> of the blood of this righteous man: see ye to it. | And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

- 26 Then released he unto them Barabbas:

but Jesus he scourged }  
and delivered }  
to be crucified.

## § 83. THE

## Matt. xxvii.

- 27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the palace, and gathered unto him the whole band.  
28 And they stripped<sup>4</sup> him, and put on him a scarlet robe.  
29<sup>a</sup> And they plaited a crown of thorns and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand;  
29<sup>c</sup> and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!  
30<sup>b</sup> and took the reed and smote him on the head.  
30<sup>a</sup> And they spat upon him,  
29<sup>b</sup> and they kneeled down before him,

- 31 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the robe, and put on him his garments,

and led him away to crucify him.

- 32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to go with them, that he might bear his cross.

- 33 And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, The place of a skull,  
34 they gave him 'wine' to drink 'mingled with gall':<sup>a</sup> and when he had tasted it he would not drink.  
35 And when they had crucified him,

they 'parted his garments among them, casting lots':<sup>b</sup>

- 36 and they sat and watched him there.

- 37 And they set up over his head } his accusation written, }  
This is Jesus the King of the Jews.  
38 Then are there crucified with him two robbers, one on the right hand, and one on the left.

- 39 And they that passed by railed on him,  
40 'wagging their heads,'<sup>c</sup> and saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself: if thou art the Son of God, come down from the cross.  
41 In like manner also the chief priests mocking him,

<sup>a</sup> Ps. lxi. 2f.

<sup>b</sup> Ps. xxii. 16.

<sup>c</sup> Ps. xxii. 7.

<sup>d</sup> Ps. xxii. 7.

BEFORE PILATE (*continued*).

Luke xxiii.

*that what they asked for should be done.*

- <sup>27</sup> And he released him *that for insurrection and murder had been cast into prison, whom they asked for* ;  
but Jesus he delivered up *to their will.*

## CRUCIFIXION.

Luke xxiii.

- <sup>26</sup> And when they led him away,  
they *laid hold upon*  
one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country,  
and *laid on him* the cross, to bear it *after Jesus.*

- <sup>33</sup> And when they came unto the place which is called  
The skull,

*there they crucified him,*

- <sup>34</sup> *and the malefactors, one on the right hand and the other on the left.* | <sup>b</sup> And Jesus said, Father, forgive them ; *for they know not what they do.*  
And 'parting his garments among them,  
they cast lots.' <sup>b</sup>

- <sup>38</sup> And there was also a superscription over him,

This is the King of the Jews.

- <sup>39</sup> . . . and the *malefactors*,  
one on the right hand and the other on the left.]

- <sup>35</sup> And the people stood 'beholding'. <sup>c</sup>

And the rulers also

'scoffed at him', <sup>d</sup>

<sup>1</sup> M. or palace.    <sup>2</sup> M. add <sup>28</sup> And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was reckoned with transgressors. See Luke xxii. 37.  
<sup>3</sup> M. of this blood : see ye, &c.    <sup>4</sup> M. clothed.    <sup>5</sup> M. omit And Jesus said . . . what they do.

## Mark xv.

- with the scribes, said,  
He saved others ; himself he cannot save.  
32 Let the Christ, the King of Israel,  
now come down from the cross,  
that we may see and believe.

And they that were crucified with him  
reproached him.

E.

- 33 And *when* the sixth hour was come,  
there was darkness over the whole land  
until the ninth hour.  
34 And at the ninth hour  
Jesus cried with a loud voice,  
Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani ?  
which is, *being interpreted*,  
'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?' <sup>a</sup>  
35 And some of them that stood by,  
when they heard it, said,  
*Behold*, he calleth Elijah.  
36 And one ran,  
and filling a sponge full of vinegar,  
put it on a reed, and gave him to drink,  
saying, Let be ;  
let us see whether Elijah cometh to take him down.  
37 And Jesus uttered a loud voice,

and gave up the ghost.

F.

- 38 And the veil of the temple was rent in twain  
from the top to the bottom.

G.

- 39 And when the centurion,  
*which stood by over against him*,  
saw that he so <sup>1</sup> gave up the ghost,  
he said,  
Truly this man was <sup>2</sup> the Son of God.

H.

- 40 And there were also women  
beholding from afar :  
among whom were both Mary Magdalene,  
and Mary the mother of James the less and of Josès,  
and Salome ;  
41 who, *when he was in Galilee*,  
followed him, and ministered unto him ;  
and many other women  
*which came up with him unto Jerusalem.*

<sup>a</sup> Ps. xxii. 1.<sup>b</sup> Ps. xxi. 6.<sup>c</sup> Ps. xxxviii. 11, lxxxviii. 8.

## Matt. xxvii.

- with the scribes and elders, said,  
42 He saved others ; himself he cannot save.  
He is the King of Israel ;  
let him now come down from the cross,  
and we will believe on him.  
43 He trusteth on God ; let him deliver him now,  
*if he desireth him* :  
*for he said, I am the Son of God.*  
44 And the robbers also that were crucified with him  
cast upon him the same reproach.

- 45 Now from the sixth hour  
there was darkness over all the land  
until the ninth hour.  
46 And about the ninth hour  
Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying,  
Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani ?  
that is,  
'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?' <sup>a</sup>  
47 And some of them that stood there,  
when they heard it, said,  
*This man calleth Elijah.*  
48 And straightway one of them ran,  
and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar,  
and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.  
49 And the rest said, Let be ;  
let us see whether Elijah cometh to save him. <sup>b</sup>  
50 And Jesus cried again with a loud voice,  
and yielded up his spirit.

- 51 And behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain  
from the top to the bottom ;  
52 and the earth did quake ; and the rocks were rent ; | and the  
tombs were opened ; and many bodies of the saints that had  
fallen asleep were raised ; | and coming forth out of the  
tombs after his resurrection they entered into the holy city  
and appeared unto many.  
54 Now the centurion,  
and they that were with him watching Jesus,  
when they saw the earthquake, and the things that were done,  
feared exceedingly, saying,  
Truly this was <sup>2</sup> the Son of God.

- 55a And many women were there  
beholding from afar,  
56 among whom was Mary Magdalene,  
and Mary the mother of James and Josès,  
and the mother of the sons of Zebedee.  
55b which had followed Jesus from Galilee, }  
ministering unto him :



CRUCIFIXION (*continued*).

## Luke xxiii.

saying,  
He saved others; let him save himself,  
if this is the Christ of God, his chosen.

<sup>39</sup> And one of the malefactors which were hanged  
railed on him,  
<sup>40</sup> saying, Art not thou the Christ? save thyself and us. | But  
the other answered, and rebuking him said, Dost thou not  
even fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? |  
<sup>41</sup> And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our  
<sup>42</sup> deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. | And he said,  
<sup>43</sup> Jesus, remember me when thou comest <sup>a</sup>in thy kingdom. | And  
he said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou  
be with me in Paradise.  
<sup>44</sup> And it was now about the sixth hour,  
and a darkness came over the whole land  
<sup>45a</sup> until the ninth hour, the sun's light failing:

<sup>36</sup> And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him,  
offering him vinegar,  
and saying,  
If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself.

<sup>46</sup> And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said,  
Father, 'into thy hands I commend my spirit:' <sup>b</sup>  
and having said this, he gave up the ghost.

<sup>45b</sup> and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

<sup>47</sup> And when the centurion

saw what was done,  
he glorified God, saying,  
Certainly this was a righteous man.

<sup>48</sup> And all the multitudes that came together to this sight, when  
they beheld the things that were done, returned smiting their  
breasts.

<sup>49a</sup> And all 'his acquaintance,' and the women  
<sup>49c</sup> 'stood afar off,' <sup>c</sup> beholding these things.

<sup>49b</sup> that followed with him from Galilee, }

<sup>1</sup> M. add cried out, and.

<sup>2</sup> M. or a son of God.

<sup>3</sup> M. add And another took a spear and pierced his side, and there came out water and blood. See John xix. 34.

<sup>4</sup> M. into.

## Mark xv.

- <sup>42</sup> And when even was now come,  
because it was the Preparation,  
that is, the day before the sabbath,  
<sup>43</sup> there came Joseph of Arimathaea,  
a councillor of honourable estate,

who also himself was looking for the kingdom of God ;  
and he boldly went in unto Pilate,  
and asked for the body of Jesus.

- <sup>44</sup> And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead :  
and calling unto him the centurion,  
he asked him whether he <sup>1</sup> had been any while dead.

- <sup>45</sup> And when he learned it of the centurion,  
he granted the corpse to Joseph.

- <sup>46</sup> And he bought a linen clo'h,  
and taking him down,  
wound him in the linen cloth,  
and laid him in a tomb  
which had been hewn out of a rock ;  
and he rolled a stone against the door of the tomb.

- <sup>47</sup> And Mary Magdalene  
and Mary the mother of Joses  
beheld where he was laid.

## Mark xvi.

- <sup>1</sup> And when the sabbath was past,  
Mary Magdalene,  
and Mary the mother of James,  
and Salome, brought spices,  
that they might come and anoint him.  
<sup>2</sup> And very early on the first day of the week,  
they come to the tomb  
when the sun was risen.  
<sup>3</sup> And they were saying among themselves,  
Who shall roll us away the stone  
from the door of the tomb ?  
<sup>4</sup> And looking up,  
they see that the stone is rolled back :  
for it was exceeding great.  
<sup>5</sup> And entering into the tomb,

they saw a young man sitting on the right side,  
arrayed in a white robe ;  
and they were amazed.

- <sup>6</sup> And he saith unto them, Be not amazed :  
ye seek Jesus, the Nazarene,  
which hath been crucified :  
he is risen ; he is not here :  
behold, the place where they laid him !  
<sup>7</sup> But go, tell his disciples and Peter,

He goeth before you into Galilee :  
there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

- <sup>8</sup> And they went out, and fled from the tomb ;

## Matt. xxvii.

- <sup>57</sup> And when even was come,

there came a rich man from Arimathaea, named Joseph,

- who also himself was Jesus' disciple :  
<sup>58</sup> this man went to Pilate,  
and asked for the body of Jesus.

Then Pilate commanded it to be given up.

- <sup>59</sup> And Joseph took the body,  
and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,  
<sup>60</sup> and laid it in his own new tomb,  
which he had hewn out in the rock :  
and he rolled a great stone to the door of the tomb,  
and departed.

- <sup>61</sup> And Mary Magdalene was there,  
and the other Mary,  
sitting over against the sepulchre.

## Matt. xxviii.

- <sup>1a</sup> Now late on the sabbath day,  
<sup>1c</sup> came Mary Magdalene  
and the other Mary

to see the sepulchre.

- <sup>1b</sup> as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week,  
<sup>2</sup> And behold, there was a great earthquake ; for an angel of  
the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away  
the stone, and sat upon it.

- <sup>3</sup> His appearance was as lightning, and his raiment white as  
<sup>4</sup> snow : | and for fear of him the watchers did quake, and  
became as dead men.

- <sup>5</sup> And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye :  
for I know that ye seek Jesus,  
which hath been crucified.

- <sup>6</sup> He is not here ; for he is risen, even as he said.  
Come, see the place where <sup>2</sup> the Lord lay.

- <sup>7</sup> And go quickly, and tell his disciples,  
He is risen from the dead ;  
and lo, he goeth before you into Galilee ;  
there shall ye see him : lo, I have told you.

- <sup>8</sup> And they departed quickly from the tomb

## BURIAL.

## Luke xxiii.

- <sup>54</sup> And it was *the day of the Preparation*,  
and the sabbath *drew on*.  
<sup>50</sup> And behold, a man named Joseph,  
who was a councillor, *a good man and a righteous* }  
<sup>51</sup> (*he had not consented to their counsel and deed*), }  
*a man of Arimathaea, a city of the Jews,*  
who was looking for the kingdom of God :  
<sup>52</sup> this man went to Pilate,  
and asked for the body of Jesus.

- <sup>53</sup> And he took it down,  
and wrapped it in a linen cloth,  
and laid him in a tomb that was *hewn in stone*, }  
*where never man had yet lain.* }  
<sup>55</sup> And the women, which had come with him out of Galilee,  
*followed after,*  
and beheld the tomb, and how his body was laid.  
<sup>56</sup> And they returned,  
and prepared spices and ointments.

## RESURRECTION.

## Luke xxiv.

- <sup>1b</sup> bringing the spices *which they had prepared*.  
[<sup>10a</sup> Now they were Mary Magdalene,  
and Joanna,  
and Mary the mother of James :] }  
<sup>1a</sup> But on the first day of the week, *at early dawn*,  
they came unto the tomb,  
<sup>2</sup> And they found the stone rolled away from the tomb.  
<sup>3</sup> And they entered in,  
and found not the body <sup>3</sup> of the Lord Jesus.  
<sup>4</sup> And it came to pass, while they were perplexed thereabout,  
behold, two men stood by them  
in dazzling apparel :  
<sup>5</sup> and as they were affrighted,  
and bowed down their faces to the earth,  
they said unto them,  
*Why seek ye the living among the dead ?*  
<sup>6</sup> <sup>4</sup> He is not here, but is risen :  
*remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, |*  
<sup>7</sup> saying that the Son of man must be delivered up into the  
hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise  
again.

- <sup>8, 9</sup> And they remembered his words, and returned <sup>5</sup> from the tomb,

<sup>1</sup> M. were already dead.    <sup>2</sup> M. he lay.    <sup>3</sup> M. omit of the Lord Jesus.    <sup>4</sup> M. omit He is not here, but is risen.    <sup>5</sup> M. omit from the tomb.

**Mark xvi.**

*for trembling and astonishment had come upon them :  
and they said nothing to any one ;  
for they were afraid.*

**Matt. xxviii.**

*with fear and great joy,  
and ran to bring his disciples word.  
<sup>9</sup> And behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they  
<sup>10</sup> came and took hold of his feet, and worshipped him. | Then  
saith Jesus unto them, Fear not : go tell my brethren that  
they depart into Galilee, and there shall they see me.*

**§ 86. CONCLUSION.****[Mark xvi.<sup>1</sup>**

- <sup>9</sup> Now when he was risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast  
<sup>10</sup> out seven devils. | She went and told them that had been with  
<sup>11</sup> him, as they mourned and wept. | And they, when they heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, disbelieved.  
<sup>12</sup> And after these things he was manifested in another form unto two of them, as they walked, on their way into the  
<sup>13</sup> country. | And they went away and told it unto the rest : neither believed they them.  
<sup>14</sup> And afterward he was manifested unto the eleven themselves as they sat at meat ; and he upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not  
<sup>15</sup> them which had seen him after he was risen. | And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to  
<sup>16</sup> the whole creation. | He that believeth and is baptized shall  
<sup>17</sup> be saved ; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned. | And these signs shall follow them that believe : in my name shall they cast out devils ; they shall speak with <sup>2</sup> new tongues ; |  
<sup>18</sup> they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them ; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.  
<sup>19</sup> So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken unto them, was received up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand  
<sup>20</sup> of God. | And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word by the signs that followed. Amen.]



## RESURRECTION (continued).

Luke xxiv.

and told all these things to the eleven, and to all the rest.

<sup>10</sup> Now they were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James: and the other women with them told these things unto the apostles.

<sup>11</sup> And these words appeared in their sight as idle talk; and <sup>12</sup> they disbelieved them. | <sup>3</sup> But Peter arose, and ran unto the

tomb; and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen cloths by themselves; and he departed to his home, wondering at that which was come to pass.

<sup>1</sup> M. omit from verse 9 to the end.

<sup>2</sup> M. omit new.

<sup>3</sup> M. omit verse 12.

## PART II

### ST. MATTHEW

(OMITTING PASSAGES ALREADY PRINTED IN PART I)

#### § 87. GENEALOGY.

##### Matt. i.

<sup>1</sup> [The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham. v. § 1.]

<sup>2</sup> Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judah and his brethren; | and Judah begat Perez and Zerah of Tamar; and Perez begat Hezron; and Hezron begat Ram; | and Ram begat Amminadab; and Amminadab begat Nahshon; and Nahshon begat Salmon; | and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth; | and Obed begat Jesse; and Jesse begat David the king.

And David begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Uriah; | and Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat Abijah; and Abijah begat Asa; | and Asa begat Jehoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Uzziah; | and Uzziah begat Jotham; and Jotham begat Ahaz; | and Ahaz begat Hezekiah; | and Hezekiah begat Manasseh; | and Manasseh begat Amon; and Amon begat Josiah; | and Josiah begat Jechoniah and his brethren, at the time of the carrying away to Babylon.

<sup>12</sup> And after the carrying away to Babylon, Jechoniah begat Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel; | and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; | and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; | and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; | and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

<sup>17</sup> So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations.

[Cf. Luke iii.]

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age, being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the son of Heli, | the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, | the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, | the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Joda, | the son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri, | the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of Er, | the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, | the son of Symeon, the son of Judas, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam, the son of Eliakim, | the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, | the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of Salmon, the son of Nahshon, | the son of Amminadab, the son of Arni, the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, the son of Judah, | the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor, | the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Shelah, | the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, | the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan, | the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God.]

#### § 88. THE NATIVITY.

##### Matt. i.

<sup>18</sup> Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. | <sup>19</sup> And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily. | But when he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. | And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name Jesus; for it is he that shall save his people from their sins. | Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,

<sup>23</sup> Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son,

And they shall call his name Immanuel;

<sup>24</sup> which is, being interpreted, God with us, | And Joseph

§ 88. THE NATIVITY (*continued*).

## Matt. i.

arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took unto him his wife; } and knew her not till she had brought forth a son: and he called his name Jesus.

## § 89. THE WISE MEN.

## Matt. ii.

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, wise men from the east came to Jerusalem, saying, | Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we saw his star in the east, and are come to worship him. | And when Herod the king heard it, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. | And gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he inquired of them where the Christ should be born. | And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet,  
And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah,  
Art in no wise least among the princes of Judah:  
For out of thee shall come forth a governor,  
Which shall be shepherd of my people Israel.  
Then Herod privily called the wise men, and learned of them carefully what time the star appeared. | And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search out carefully concerning the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word, that I also may come and worship him. | And they, having heard the king, went their way; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. | And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. | And they came into the house and saw the young child with Mary his mother; and they fell down and worshipped him; and opening their treasures they offered unto him gifts, gold and frankincense and myrrh. | And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

## § 90. THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT, AND MURDER OF THE CHILDREN.

## Matt. ii.

Now when they were departed, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I tell thee: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. | And he arose and took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt; | and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,  
Out of Egypt did I call my son. | Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the borders thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had carefully learned of the wise men. | Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying,  
A voice was heard in Ramah,  
Weeping and great mourning,  
Rachel weeping for her children;  
And she would not be comforted, because they are not.  
But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, | saying, Arise and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead that sought the young child's life. | And he arose and took the young child and his



§ 90. THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT, AND MURDER OF THE CHILDREN (*continued*).

Matt. ii.

<sup>22</sup> mother, and came into the land of Israel. | But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning over Judaea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; and being warned of God in a dream, he withdrew into the parts of Galilee, |  
<sup>23</sup> and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, that he should be called a Nazarene.

[THE PREACHING OF JOHN THE BAPTIST. v. § 7.]

[THE TEMPTATION. v. § 5.]

## § 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT.

Matt. v.

Luke vi.

A.

<sup>1</sup> And seeing the multitudes,  
 he went up into the mountain:

and when he had sat down,  
 his disciples came unto him:

<sup>2</sup> and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

B.

<sup>3</sup> Blessed are the poor in spirit:  
 for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>4</sup> Blessed are 'they that mourn':  
 for they 'shall be comforted'.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>5</sup> Blessed are 'the meek':  
 for they 'shall inherit the earth'.<sup>b 1</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness:  
 for they shall be filled.

<sup>7</sup> Blessed are the merciful:  
 for they shall obtain mercy.

<sup>8</sup> Blessed are 'the pure in heart':<sup>c</sup>  
 for they shall see God.

<sup>9</sup> Blessed are the peace-makers:  
 for they shall be called sons of God.

<sup>10</sup> Blessed are they that have been persecuted for righteousness' sake:  
 for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

<sup>11</sup> Blessed are ye when men shall reproach you,  
 and persecute you,

and say all manner of evil against you falsely,  
 for my sake.

<sup>12</sup> Rejoice, and be exceeding glad:  
 for great is your reward in heaven:  
 for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

<sup>13</sup> [Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men. v. § 55.]

C.

<sup>14</sup> Ye are the light of the world.

A city set on a hill cannot be hid.

<sup>15</sup> [Neither do men light a lamp,  
 and put it under the bushel,  
 but on the stand;

and it shineth unto all that are in the house. v. § 26.]

<sup>17</sup> and he came down with them, and stood on a level place, and a great multitude of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judaea and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be  
<sup>18</sup> healed of their diseases; | and they that were troubled with  
<sup>19</sup> unclean spirits were healed. | And all the multitude sought to touch him: for power came forth from him, and healed them all.

<sup>20</sup> And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, }

Blessed are ye poor:  
 for yours is the kingdom of God.

<sup>21b</sup> Blessed are ye that weep now:  
 for ye shall laugh.

<sup>21a</sup> Blessed are ye that hunger now:  
 for ye shall be filled.

<sup>22</sup> Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you,  
 and when they shall separate you from their company, and  
 reproach you,  
 and cast out your name as evil,  
 for the Son of man's sake.

<sup>23</sup> Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy:  
 for behold, your reward is great in heaven:  
 for in the same manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. lxi. 2.<sup>b</sup> Ps. xxxvii. 11.<sup>c</sup> Ps. xxiv. 4.<sup>1</sup> M. transpose verses 4 and 5.



§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

## Matt. v.

<sup>16</sup> *Even so let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.*

D. <sup>17</sup> *Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets : I came not to destroy, but to fulfil. | For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass away from the law, till all things be accomplished.*

<sup>19</sup> *Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven : but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. | For I say unto you, that except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.*

E. <sup>21</sup> *Ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, 'Thou shalt not kill'<sup>a</sup>; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgement : | but I say unto you, that every one who is angry with his brother<sup>1</sup> shall be in danger of the judgement; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council; and whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of the hell of fire. | If therefore thou art offering thy gift at the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee, | leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.*

<sup>25</sup> *Agree with thine adversary quickly,*

whiles thou art with him in the way ;  
lest haply the adversary deliver thee to the judge,  
and the judge deliver thee to the officer,  
and thou be cast into prison.

<sup>26</sup> *Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the last farthing.*

F. <sup>27</sup> *Ye have heard that it was said, 'Thou shalt not commit adultery.'<sup>b</sup> | but I say unto you, that every one that looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.*

G. [29-30 v. § 54.] [31-32 v. § 56.]

<sup>33</sup> *Again, ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, 'Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths :'<sup>c</sup> | but I say unto you, Swear not at all ; neither by 'the heaven', for 'it is the throne of God' ; | nor by 'the earth', for 'it is the footstool of his feet' ;<sup>d</sup> nor by Jerusalem, for it is 'the city of the great King'.<sup>e</sup> | Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black. | But let your speech be, Yea, yea ; Nay, nay ; and whatsoever is more than these is of the evil one.*

H. <sup>38</sup> *Ye have heard that it was said, 'An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth' :<sup>f</sup> | but I say unto you, Resist not<sup>2</sup> him that is evil :*

but whosoever smiteth thee on thy right cheek,  
turn to him the other also.

<sup>40</sup> *And if any man would go to law with thee, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also.*

<sup>41</sup> *And whosoever shall compel thee to go one mile,*

## Luke xvi.

<sup>17</sup> *But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fall.*

## Luke xii.

<sup>57</sup> *And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right ?*

<sup>58</sup> *For as thou art going with thine adversary before the magistrate, on the way give diligence to be quit of him ; lest haply he hale thee unto the judge, and the judge shall deliver thee unto the officer, and the officer shall cast thee into prison.*

<sup>59</sup> *I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence,*

till thou have paid the very last mite.

## Luke vi.

<sup>29</sup> *To him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other ; and from him that taketh away thy cloke } withhold not thy coat also. }*

<sup>a</sup> Exod. xx. 13 ; Deut. v. 19.

<sup>b</sup> Exod. xx. 14 ; Deut. v. 18.

<sup>c</sup> Num. xxx. 3.

<sup>d</sup> Isa. lxvi. 1.

<sup>e</sup> Ps. xlvi. 2.

<sup>f</sup> Exod. xxi. 23 ; Lev. xxiv. 20 ; Deut. xix. 21.

<sup>1</sup> M. add without cause.

<sup>2</sup> M. or evil.

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. v.

Luke vi.

*go with him twain.*

- <sup>42</sup> Give to him that asketh thee,  
and from him that *would borrow of thee*  
*turn not thou away.*

I.

- <sup>43</sup> Ye have heard that it was said, 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour,'<sup>a</sup> and hate thine enemy:

- <sup>44</sup> but I say unto you,  
Love your enemies

*and pray for them that persecute you;*

- <sup>45</sup> that ye may be sons of your Father which is in heaven:  
for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and the good,  
and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust.

- <sup>46</sup> For if ye love them that love you,  
what reward have ye?  
*do not even the publicans the same?*

- <sup>47</sup> And if ye salute  
your brethren only,  
what do ye more than others?  
*do not even the Gentiles the same?*

- <sup>48</sup> 'Ye' therefore 'shall be perfect',<sup>b</sup>  
as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Matt. vi.

J.

- <sup>1</sup> Take heed that ye do not your righteousness before men, to  
be seen of them: else ye have no reward with your Father  
<sup>2</sup> which is in heaven.

*When therefore thou doest alms, sound not a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. 'Verily I say unto you,*

- <sup>3</sup> They have received their reward.'<sup>d</sup> | But when thou doest alms,  
let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:

- <sup>4</sup> that thine alms may be in secret: 'and thy Father which  
seeth in secret shall recompense thee.'<sup>e</sup>

K.

- <sup>5</sup> And when ye pray, ye shall not be as the hypocrites: for they  
love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners  
of the streets, that they may be seen of men. 'Verily I say unto

- <sup>6</sup> you, They have received their reward.'<sup>f</sup> | But thou, when  
thou prayest, 'enter into thine inner chamber, and having  
shut thy door, pray'<sup>g</sup> to thy Father which is in secret, 'and  
thy Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee.'<sup>h</sup>

- <sup>7</sup> And in praying use not vain repetitions, as the Gentiles do:  
for they think that they shall be heard for their much  
<sup>8</sup> speaking. | Be not therefore like unto them: for your Father  
knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

- <sup>9</sup> After this manner therefore pray ye:  
Our Father which art in heaven,

- <sup>10</sup> Hallowed be thy name.  
Thy kingdom come.

*Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.*

- <sup>11</sup> Give us this day our daily bread.

- <sup>12</sup> And forgive us our debts,  
as we also have forgiven our debtors.

- <sup>13</sup> And bring us not into temptation,  
but deliver us from<sup>1</sup> the evil one.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Lev. xix. 18. <sup>b</sup> Deut. xviii. 13. <sup>c</sup> Ps. ciii. 8. <sup>d</sup> Cf. vi. 5, 16. <sup>e</sup> Cf. vi. 6, 18. <sup>f</sup> Cf. vi. 2, 16. <sup>g</sup> Isa. xxi. 20. <sup>h</sup> Cf. vi. 4, 18.

<sup>1</sup> M. or evil. <sup>2</sup> M. add For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

<sup>3</sup> M. despairing of no man. <sup>4</sup> M. Our Father, which art in heaven. <sup>5</sup> M. add Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.

<sup>6</sup> M. add but deliver us from the evil one (or the evil).

- <sup>30</sup> Give to every one that asketh thee;  
and of him that *taketh away thy goods*  
*ask them not again.*

- <sup>27</sup> But I say unto you which hear,  
Love your enemies,  
*do good to them that hate you,*

- <sup>28</sup> *bless them that curse you,*

- pray for them that despitefully use you . . .*

- <sup>35b</sup> . . . and ye shall be sons of the Most High:  
for he is kind toward the unthankful and evil.

- <sup>32</sup> And if ye love them that love you,  
what thank have ye?  
for even sinners love those that love them.

- <sup>33b</sup> And if ye do good to them

*that do good to you,*

*what thank have ye?*

*for even sinners do the same.*

- <sup>34</sup> And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what  
thank have ye? even sinners lend to sinners, to receive again

- <sup>35a</sup> as much. | But love your enemies, and do them good, and  
lend, never despairing<sup>3</sup>; and your reward shall be great, . . .

- <sup>36</sup> Be ye merciful,  
even as your Father 'is merciful'.<sup>c</sup>

Luke xi.

- <sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place,  
that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord,

- <sup>2</sup> teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples.  
*And ye said unto them,*

*When ye pray, say,*

*'Father,*

*Hallowed be thy name.*

*Thy kingdom come.'*

- <sup>3</sup> Give us day by day our daily bread.

- <sup>4</sup> And forgive us our sins,  
for we ourselves also forgive every one that is indebted to us.  
And bring us not into temptation.<sup>6</sup>

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. vi.

Luke xi.

<sup>14</sup> [For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly  
<sup>15</sup> Father will also forgive you. | But if ye forgive not  
 men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive  
 your trespasses. v. § 63.]

L.  
<sup>16</sup> Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad  
 countenance : for they disfigure their faces, that they may be  
 seen of men to fast. ' Verily I say unto you, They have  
<sup>17</sup> received their reward.' <sup>a</sup> | But thou, when thou fastest, anoint  
<sup>18</sup> thy head, and wash thy face ; | that thou be not seen of men to  
 fast, but of thy Father which is in secret : ' and thy Father  
 which seeth in secret, shall recompense thee.' <sup>b</sup>

M.  
<sup>19</sup> Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where  
 moth and rust doth consume, and where thieves break through  
 and steal :  
<sup>20</sup> but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven,  
 where neither moth nor rust doth consume,  
 and where thieves do not break through nor steal :  
<sup>21</sup> for where thy treasure is,  
 there will thy heart be also.

N.  
<sup>22</sup> The lamp of the body is the eye :  
 if therefore thine eye be single,  
 thy whole body shall be full of light.  
<sup>23</sup> But if thine eye be evil,  
 thy whole body shall be full of darkness.  
 If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great  
 is the darkness !

O.  
<sup>24</sup> No man can serve two masters :  
 for either he will hate the one, and love the other ;  
 or else he will hold to one and despise the other.  
 Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

P.  
<sup>25</sup> Therefore I say unto you,  
 Be not anxious for your life,  
 what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink ;  
 nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.  
 Is not the life more than the food,  
 and the body than the raiment ?  
<sup>26</sup> Behold the birds of the heaven,  
 that they sow not, neither do they reap,  
 nor gather into barns ;  
 and your heavenly Father feedeth them.  
 Are not ye of much more value than they ?  
<sup>27</sup> And which of you by being anxious can  
 add one cubit unto his ' stature ?  
<sup>28</sup> and why are ye anxious concerning raiment ?  
 Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow ;  
 they toil not, neither do they spin :  
<sup>29</sup> yet I say unto you that  
 even Solomon in all his glory  
 was not arrayed like one of these.  
<sup>30</sup> But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field,

Luke xii.

<sup>32</sup> Fear not, little flock ; for it is your Father's good pleasure to  
<sup>33</sup> give you the kingdom. | Sell that ye have, and give alms ; make  
 for yourselves purses which wax not old, }  
 a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, }  
 where no thief draweth near, }  
 neither moth destroyeth. }  
<sup>34</sup> For where your treasure is,  
 there will your heart be also.

Luke xi.

<sup>34</sup> The lamp of thy body is thine eye :  
 when thine eye is single,  
 thy whole body also is full of light ;  
 but when it is evil,  
 thy body also is full of darkness.  
<sup>35</sup> Look therefore whether the light that is in thee be not  
 darkness.  
<sup>36</sup> If therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part  
 dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with  
 its bright shining doth give thee light.

Luke xvi.

<sup>13</sup> No servant can serve two masters :  
 for either he will hate the one and love the other ;  
 or else he will hold to one, and despise the other.  
 Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Luke xii.

<sup>22</sup> And he said unto his disciples,  
 Therefore I say unto you,  
 Be not anxious for your life,  
 what ye shall eat ;  
 nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.  
<sup>23</sup> For the life is more than the food,  
 and the body than the raiment.  
<sup>24</sup> Consider the ravens,  
 that they sow not, neither reap ;  
 which have no store-chamber nor barn ;  
 and God feedeth them :  
 of how much more value are ye than the birds !  
<sup>25</sup> And which of you by being anxious can  
 add a cubit unto his ' stature ?  
<sup>26</sup> If then ye are not able to do even that which is least,  
 why are ye anxious concerning the rest ?  
<sup>27</sup> Consider the lilies, how they grow :  
 they toil not, neither do they spin ;  
 yet I say unto you,  
 Even Solomon in all his glory  
 was not arrayed like one of these.  
<sup>28</sup> But if God doth so clothe the grass in the field,

<sup>a</sup> Cf. vi. 2, 5.<sup>b</sup> Cf. vi. 4, 6.<sup>1</sup> M. or age.



§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

## Matt. vi.

which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven,  
shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith ?

<sup>31</sup> *Be not therefore anxious, saying,*

*What shall we eat ? or, What shall we drink ?*

*or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed ?*

<sup>32</sup> *For after all these things do the Gentiles seek ;*

*for your heavenly Father knoweth*

*that ye have need of all these things.*

<sup>33</sup> *But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness ;*

*and all these things shall be added unto you.*

<sup>34</sup> *Be not therefore anxious for the morrow : for the morrow will be anxious for itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.*

## Matt. vii.

<sup>1</sup> Judge not, *that ye be not judged.*

<sup>2</sup> *For with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged :*

*[and with what measure ye mete,  
it shall be measured unto you. v. § 26.]*

<sup>3</sup> *And why beholdest thou the mote*

*that is in thy brother's eye,*

*but considerest not the beam*

*that is in thine own eye ?*

<sup>4</sup> *Or how wilt thou say to thy brother,*

*Let me cast out the mote*

*out of thine eye ;*

*and lo, the beam*

*is in thine own eye ?*

<sup>5</sup> *Thou hypocrite,*

*cast out first the beam out of thine own eye ;*

*and then shalt thou see clearly*

*to cast out the mote*

*out of thy brother's eye.*

R.

<sup>6</sup> *Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine, lest haply they trample them under their feet, and turn and rend you.*

S.

<sup>7</sup> *Ask, and it shall be given you ;*

*seek, and ye shall find ;*

*knock, and it shall be opened unto you :*

<sup>8</sup> *for every one that asketh receiveth ;*

*and he that seeketh findeth ;*

*and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.*

<sup>9</sup> *Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him*

*for a loaf, will give him a stone ;*

<sup>10</sup> *or if he ask for a fish, will he give him a serpent ?*

<sup>11</sup> *If ye then, being evil,*

*know how to give good gifts unto your children,*

*how much more shall your Father which is in heaven*

*give good things to them that ask him ?*

T.

<sup>12</sup> *All things therefore whatsoever ye would*

*that men should do unto you,*

*even so do ye also unto them :*

*for this is the law and the prophets.*

<sup>1</sup> M. the kingdom of God.

## Luke xii.

which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven ;  
how much more shall he clothe you, O ye of little faith ?

<sup>29</sup> *And seek not ye*

*what ye shall eat, and what ye shall drink,*

*neither be ye of doubtful mind.*

<sup>30</sup> *For all these things do the nations of the world seek after*

*but your Father knoweth*

*that ye have need of these things.*

<sup>31</sup> *Howbeit seek ye <sup>1</sup> his kingdom,*

*and these things shall be added unto you. . . .*

## Luke vi.

<sup>37</sup> *And judge not, and ye shall not be judged :*

*and condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned : release,*

<sup>38</sup> *and ye shall be released : | give, and it shall be given unto you ;*

*good measure, pressed down, shaken together, running over,*

*shall they give into your bosom.*

*[For with what measure ye mete  
it shall be measured to you again.]*

<sup>41</sup> *And why beholdest thou the mote*

*that is in thy brother's eye,*

*but considerest not the beam*

*that is in thine own eye ?*

<sup>42</sup> *Or how canst thou say to thy brother,*

*Brother, let me cast out the mote*

*that is in thine eye,*

*when thou beholdest not the beam*

*that is in thine own eye ?*

*Thou hypocrite,*

*cast out first the beam out of thine own eye,*

*and then shalt thou see clearly*

*to cast out the mote*

*that is in thy brother's eye.*

## Luke xi.

<sup>9</sup> *And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you ;*

*seek, and ye shall find ;*

*knock, and it shall be opened unto you.*

<sup>10</sup> *For every one that asketh receiveth ;*

*and he that seeketh findeth ;*

*and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.*

<sup>11</sup> *And of which of you that is a father shall his son ask*

*<sup>2</sup> a loaf, and he give him a stone ?*

*or a fish, and he for a fish give him a serpent ?*

<sup>12</sup> *Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion ?*

<sup>13</sup> *If ye then, being evil,*

*know how to give good gifts unto your children,*

*how much more shall your heavenly Father*

*give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him ?*

## Luke vi.

<sup>31</sup> *And as ye would*

*that men should do to you,*

*do ye also to them likewise.*

*[Cf. Matt. xxii.*

<sup>40</sup> *On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, and the prophets.]*

<sup>2</sup> M. omit a loaf, and he gave him a stone ? or.



§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. vii.

- U  
13 Enter ye in by the narrow gate :  
for wide <sup>1</sup> is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to  
destruction,  
and many be they that enter in thereby.  
14 For narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that leadeth  
unto life, and few be they that find it.  
V  
15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's cloth-  
ing, but inwardly are ravening wolves.

Matt. xii.

- 0  
16 By their fruits ye shall know them.  
Do men gather grapes of  
thorns,  
or figs of thistles ?  
17 Even so every good tree  
bringeth forth good fruit ;  
but the corrupt tree bringeth  
forth evil fruit.  
18 A good tree cannot bring  
forth evil fruit,  
neither can a corrupt tree  
bring forth good fruit.  
33b . . . for the tree is known  
by its fruit.  
33a Either make the tree good,  
and its fruit good ;  
or make the tree corrupt,  
and its fruit corrupt : . . .  
34 Ye offspring of vipers, how  
can ye, being evil, speak  
good things ?  
for out of the abundance  
of the heart the mouth  
speaketh.  
35 The good man out of his  
good treasure  
bringeth forth good things :  
and the evil man out of  
his evil treasure  
bringeth forth evil things.  
19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down,  
20 and cast into the fire. | Therefore by their fruits ye shall  
know them.  
V  
21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord,  
shall enter into the kingdom of heaven ;  
but he that doeth  
the will of my Father which is in heaven.

- 22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord,  
did we not ' prophesy by thy name ' , <sup>a</sup>  
and by thy name cast out devils, and by thy name  
do many mighty works ?  
23 And then will I profess unto them,  
I never knew you :  
' depart from me, ye that work iniquity. ' <sup>b</sup>

- K  
24 Every one therefore which  
heareth these words of mine,  
and doeth them,

<sup>a</sup> Jer. xxvii. 15, xiv. 14.  
<sup>1</sup> M. omit is the gate.

Luke xiii.

- 22 And he went on his way through cities and villages, teaching,  
23 and journeying on unto Jerusalem. | And one said unto him,  
Lord, are they few that be saved ? And he said unto them,  
24 Strive to enter in by the narrow door :  
for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and shall  
not be able. . . .  
25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut  
to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at  
the door, saying, Lord, open to us ; and he shall answer and  
say to you, I know not whence ye are ; . . .

Luke vi.

- 44 For each tree is know by its own fruit.  
For of thorns men do not gather figs,  
nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. }  
43 For there is no good tree that bringeth forth corrupt fruit ;  
nor again a corrupt tree that bringeth forth good fruit.  
45b . . . for out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh  
45a The good man out of the good treasure of his heart  
bringeth forth that which is good ;  
and the evil man out of the evil treasure  
bringeth forth that which is evil : . . .  
46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord,  
and do not  
the things which I say ?

Luke xiii.

- 26 . . . then shall ye begin to say,  
We did eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach  
in our streets ;  
27 And he shall say, I tell you,  
I know not whence ye are ;  
' depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. ' <sup>b</sup>

Luke vi.

- 47 Every one that cometh unto me,  
and heareth my words,  
and doeth them,  
I will shew you to whom he is like :

<sup>b</sup> Ps. vi. 8.

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. vii.

*shall be likened unto a wise man,  
which built his house*

*upon the rock :*

<sup>25</sup> *and the rain descended, and the floods came,  
and the winds blew, and beat upon that house ;  
and it fell not :*

*for it was founded upon the rock.*

<sup>26</sup> *And every one that heareth these words of mine,  
and doeth them not,  
shall be likened unto a foolish man,  
which built his house upon the sand :*

<sup>27</sup> *and the rain descended, and the floods came,  
and the winds blew, and smote upon that house ;  
and it fell :*  
*and great was the fall thereof.*

Y

[<sup>28</sup> *And it came to pass, when Jesus ended these words,*  
<sup>29</sup> *the multitudes were astonished at his teaching : | for he  
taught them as one having authority, and not as their  
scribes, v. § 8.]*

Luke vi.

<sup>48</sup> *he is like a man  
building a house,  
who digged and went deep,  
and laid a foundation  
upon the rock :*  
*and when a flood arose,*  
*the stream brake against that house }  
and could not shake it :  
<sup>2</sup> *because it had been well builded.**

<sup>49</sup> *But he that heareth,  
and doeth not,  
is like a man  
that built a house upon the earth  
without a foundation ;  
against which the stream brake,  
and straightway it fell in ;  
and the ruin of that house was great.*

Luke vii.

<sup>1</sup> *After he had ended all his sayings in the ears of the people,  
he entered into Capernaum.*

## § 92. THE CENTURION'S SERVANT.

Matt. viii.

<sup>5</sup> *And when he was entered into Capernaum,  
there came unto him a centurion,  
beseeching him, and saying,*

<sup>6</sup> *Lord, my servant lieth in the house  
sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.*

<sup>7</sup> *And he saith unto him,  
I will come and heal him.*

<sup>8</sup> *And the centurion answered and said,  
Lord, I am not worthy  
that thou shouldest come under my roof :*

*but only say the word,  
and my servant shall be healed.*

<sup>9</sup> *For I also am a man <sup>1</sup> under authority,  
having under myself soldiers :*  
*and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth ;  
and to another, Come, and he cometh ;  
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.*

<sup>10</sup> *And when Jesus heard it, he marvelled,  
and said to them that followed,  
Verily I say unto you,  
I have not found so great faith,  
no, not in Israel.*

<sup>11</sup> *And I say unto you, that many shall come  
' from the east and the west, ' <sup>a</sup>  
and shall sit down  
with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,*

Luke vii.

<sup>1</sup> *After he had ended all his sayings in the ears of the people,  
he entered into Capernaum.*

<sup>2</sup> *And a certain centurion's*

*servant, who was dear unto him,  
was sick and at the point of death.*

<sup>3</sup> *And when he heard concerning Jesus, he sent unto him elders  
of the Jews, asking him that he would come and save his*  
<sup>4</sup> *servant. | And they, when they came to Jesus, besought him  
earnestly, saying, He is worthy that thou shouldest do this for*  
<sup>5</sup> *him : | for he loveth our nation, and himself built us our  
synagogue.*

<sup>6</sup> *And Jesus went with them.*

*And when he was now not far from the house,  
the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him,  
Lord, trouble not thyself : for I am not worthy  
that thou shouldest come under my roof :*

<sup>7</sup> *wherefore neither thought I myself worthy  
to come unto thee :*

*but say the word,  
and my servant shall be healed.*

<sup>8</sup> *For I also am a man set under authority,  
having under myself soldiers :*  
*and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth ;  
and to another, Come, and he cometh ;  
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.*

<sup>9</sup> *And when Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him,  
and turned and said unto the multitude that followed him,  
I say unto you,  
I have not found so great faith,  
no, not in Israel.*

<sup>29</sup> *And they shall come  
from the east and west, and from the north and south,  
and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.*

<sup>28b</sup> *when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,*

<sup>a</sup> Mal. i. 11; Isa. lix. 19-

<sup>1</sup> M. add set.

<sup>2</sup> M. for it had been founded upon the rock.

§ 92. THE CENTURION'S SERVANT (*continued*).

Matt. viii.

in the kingdom of heaven :

- <sup>12</sup> but the sons of the kingdom  
shall be cast forth into the outer darkness :  
there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

- <sup>13</sup> And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way ;  
as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee.  
And the servant was healed in that hour.

Luke xiii.

and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God,  
and yourselves  
cast forth without.

- <sup>28a</sup> There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth,  
<sup>30</sup> And behold, there are last which shall be first,  
and there are first which shall be last.

Luke vii.

- <sup>10</sup> And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the  
servant whole.

## § 93. INSTANCES OF DISCIPLESHIP.

Matt. viii.

- <sup>1</sup> Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him,  
he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.  
<sup>10</sup> And there came a scribe, and said unto him,  
Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.  
<sup>20</sup> And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes,  
and the birds of the heaven have nests ;  
but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

- <sup>21</sup> And another of the disciples said unto him,  
Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.  
<sup>22</sup> But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me ;  
and leave the dead to bury their own dead.

Luke ix.

- <sup>57</sup> And as they went in the way a certain man said unto him,  
I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.  
<sup>58</sup> And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes,  
and the birds of the heaven have nests ;  
but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

- <sup>59</sup> And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, }  
Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. }  
<sup>60</sup> But he said unto him,  
Leave the dead to bury their own dead ;  
but go thou and publish abroad the kingdom of God.

- <sup>61</sup> And another also said, I will follow thee, Lord ; but first suffer  
<sup>62</sup> me to bid farewell to them that are at my house. | But Jesus  
said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough,  
and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

## § 94. TWO BLIND MEN.

Matt. ix.

- <sup>27</sup> And as Jesus passed by from thence, two blind men followed  
him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of  
<sup>28</sup> David. | And when he was come into the house, the blind men  
came to him : and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I  
<sup>29</sup> am able to do this ? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. | Then  
touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it  
<sup>30</sup> done unto you. | And their eyes were opened. And Jesus  
strictly charged them, saying, See that no man know it. |  
<sup>31</sup> But they went forth, and spread abroad his fame in all that  
land.

[Cf. Matt. xx. 29-34 (§ 61).]

## § 95. THE CHARGE TO THE APOSTLES.

Matt. x.

A. [5<sup>b</sup>-15. v. § 33.]

- B.  
<sup>16</sup> Behold, I send you forth  
as sheep in the midst of wolves :  
be ye therefore wise as serpents,  
and harmless as doves.

C. [17-22. v. § 72 (c).]

- D.  
<sup>23</sup> But when they persecute you in this city,  
flee into the next : for verily I say unto you,  
Ye shall not have gone through the cities of Israel,  
till the Son of man be come.

- E.  
<sup>24</sup> A disciple is not above his master,  
nor a servant above his lord.

Luke x.

- <sup>3</sup> Go your ways : behold, I send you forth  
as lambs in the midst of wolves.

- <sup>40</sup> The disciple is not above his master :



§ 95. THE CHARGE TO THE APOSTLES (*continued*).

Matt. x, xi.

<sup>25</sup> *It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord.  
If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household!*

<sup>27</sup> *What I tell you in the darkness, speak ye in the light;  
and what ye hear in the ear, proclaim upon the housetops.*

<sup>28</sup> *And be not afraid of them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul:*

*but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.*

<sup>29</sup> *Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and not one of them shall fall on the ground without your Father:*

<sup>30</sup> *but the very hairs of your head are all numbered.*

<sup>31</sup> *Fear not therefore;  
ye are of more value than many sparrows.*

<sup>32</sup> *Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess  
before my Father which is in heaven.*

<sup>33</sup> *But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny  
before my Father which is in heaven.*

F.

<sup>34</sup> *Think not that I came to send peace on the earth:  
I came not to send peace, but a sword.*

<sup>35</sup> *For I came to set a man at variance  
'against his father,*

*and the daughter against her mother,*

*and the daughter in law against her mother in law:*

<sup>36</sup> *and a man's foes shall be they of his own household.'*<sup>a</sup>

<sup>37</sup> *He that loveth father or mother more than me*

*is not worthy of me;  
and he that loveth son or daughter more than me  
is not worthy of me.*

G. [38-39. v. § 47.]

H. [<sup>40</sup> *He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.* v. § 52.]

<sup>41</sup> *He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward.*

[<sup>42</sup> *And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.* v. § 53.]

xi. <sup>1</sup> *And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and preach in their cities.*

Luke vi.

*but every one when he is perfected shall be as his master.*

Luke xii.

<sup>3</sup> *Wherefore whatsoever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light;  
and what ye have spoken in the ear in the inner chambers; shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.*

<sup>4</sup> *And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them which kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do.*

<sup>5</sup> *But I will warn you whom ye shall fear:  
Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell;  
yea, I say unto you, fear him.*

<sup>6</sup> *Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? and not one of them is forgotten in the sight of God.*

<sup>7</sup> *But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.  
Fear not:*

*ye are of more value than many sparrows.*

<sup>8</sup> *And I say unto you, Every one who shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess  
before the angels of God:*

<sup>9</sup> *but he that denieth me in the presence of men, shall be denied  
in the presence of the angels of God.*

<sup>51</sup> *Think ye that I am come to give peace in the earth?  
I tell you, Nay; but rather division:*

<sup>52</sup> *for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.*

<sup>53</sup> *They shall be divided, father against son, and 'son against father';  
mother against daughter, and 'daughter against her mother';  
mother in law against her daughter in law, and 'daughter in law against her mother in law'.<sup>a</sup>*

Luke xiv.

<sup>25</sup> *Now there went with him great multitudes: and he turned, and said unto them,*

<sup>26</sup> *If any man cometh unto me, and hateth not his own father, and mother,*

*and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also,  
he cannot be my disciple.*

<sup>27</sup> *Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.*

<sup>a</sup> Mic. vii. 6.



## § 96. JOHN THE BAPTIST.

## Matt. xi.

- <sup>2</sup> Now when John heard in the prison  
the works of the Christ,  
<sup>3</sup> he sent by his disciples, and said unto him,  
  
Art thou he that cometh,  
or look we for another ?
- <sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto them,  
Go your way and tell John  
the things which ye do hear and see :  
<sup>5</sup> ' the blind receive their sight,' and the lame walk,  
the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,  
and the dead are raised up,  
and ' the poor have good tidings preached to them',<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>6</sup> And blessed is he, whosoever shall find  
none occasion of stumbling in me.
- <sup>7</sup> And as these went their way,  
Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John,  
What went ye out into the wilderness to behold ?  
<sup>8</sup> But what went ye out for to see ?  
a man clothed in soft raiment ?  
Behold, they that wear soft raiment  
are in kings' houses.
- <sup>9</sup> <sup>1</sup> But wherefore went ye out ? to see a prophet ?  
Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.  
<sup>10</sup> This is he, of whom it is written,  
' Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,  
Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>11</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
Among them that are born of women  
there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist :  
yet he that is but little in the kingdom of heaven  
is greater than he.

- <sup>12</sup> And from the days of John the Baptist until now  
the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence,  
and men of violence take it by force.  
<sup>13</sup> For all the prophets and the law  
prophesied until John.  
<sup>14</sup> And if ye are willing to receive it,  
this is Elijah, which is to come.

- <sup>16</sup> But whereunto shall I liken this generation ?

- It is like unto children sitting in the marketplaces,  
which call unto their fellows, and say,  
<sup>17</sup> We piped unto you, and ye did not dance ;  
we wailed, and ye did not mourn.  
<sup>18</sup> For John came neither eating nor drinking,  
  
and they say, He hath a devil.

## Luke vii.

- <sup>18</sup> And the disciples of John told him  
of all these things.  
<sup>19</sup> And John calling unto him two of his disciples sent them to  
the Lord, saying,  
Art thou he that cometh,  
or look we for another ?
- <sup>20</sup> And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the  
Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that cometh,  
<sup>21</sup> or look we for another ? | In that hour he cured many of  
diseases and plagues and evil spirits ; and on many that were  
blind he bestowed sight.  
<sup>22</sup> And he answered and said unto them,  
Go your way, and tell John  
what things ye have seen and heard ;  
' the blind receive their sight,' the lame walk,  
the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,  
the dead are raised up,  
' the poor have good tidings preached to them.'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>23</sup> And blessed is he, whosoever shall find  
none occasion of stumbling in me.
- <sup>24</sup> And when the messengers of John were departed,  
he began to say unto the multitudes concerning John,  
What went ye out into the wilderness to behold ?  
a reed shaken with the wind ?  
<sup>25</sup> But what went ye out to see ?  
a man clothed in soft raiment ?  
Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live  
delicately,  
are in kings' courts.
- <sup>26</sup> But what went ye out to see ? a prophet ?  
Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.  
<sup>27</sup> This is he of whom it is written,  
' Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,  
Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>28</sup> I say unto you,  
Among them that are born of women  
there is none greater than John :  
yet he that is but little in the kingdom of God  
is greater than he.

## Luke xvi.

- <sup>16b</sup> from that time  
the gospel of the kingdom of God is preached,  
and every man entereth violently into it.  
<sup>16a</sup> The law and the prophets  
were until John :

## Luke vii.

- <sup>29</sup> And all the people when they heard, and the publicans, justified  
<sup>30</sup> God, being baptized with the baptism of John. | But the  
Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves the counsel  
of God, being not baptized of him.  
<sup>31</sup> Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation,  
and to what are they like ?  
<sup>32</sup> They are like unto children that sit in the marketplace,  
and call one to another ; which say,  
We piped unto you, and ye did not dance ;  
we wailed, and ye did not weep.  
<sup>33</sup> For John the Baptist is come eating no bread nor drinking  
wine ;  
And ye say, He hath a devil.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. lxi. 1.<sup>b</sup> Mal. iii. 1.<sup>1</sup> M. But what went ye out to see ? a prophet ?

§ 96. JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

Matt. xi.

- <sup>19</sup> The Son of man came eating and drinking, and *they* say,  
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,  
a friend of publicans and sinners!  
And wisdom is justified *by her* <sup>1</sup>works.

Luke vii.

- <sup>34</sup> The Son of man is come eating and drinking  
and *ye* say,  
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,  
a friend of publicans and sinners!  
<sup>35</sup> And wisdom is justified *of all her children*.

## § 97. WOE TO UNBELIEVING CITIES.

Matt. xi.

- <sup>20</sup> Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.  
<sup>21</sup> Woe unto thee, Chorazin!  
Woe unto thee, Bethsaida!  
for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which were done in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.  
<sup>22</sup> Howbeit I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgement, than for you.  
<sup>23</sup> And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou 'be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt go down unto Hades':<sup>a</sup>  
for if the mighty works had been done in Sodom which were done in thee, it would have remained until this day.  
<sup>24</sup> Howbeit I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgement, than for thee.

Luke x.

- <sup>13</sup> Woe unto thee, Chorazin!  
Woe unto thee, Bethsaida!  
for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which were done in you, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.  
<sup>14</sup> Howbeit  
it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgement, than for you.  
<sup>15</sup> And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be 'exalted unto heaven? thou shalt be brought down unto Hades.'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>12</sup> I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable in *that* day for Sodom, than for *that* city.

## § 98. THREE MEDITATIONS.

Matt. xi.

- <sup>25</sup> At that season Jesus answered and said,  
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,  
that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding,  
and didst reveal them unto babes:  
<sup>26</sup> yea, Father, for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.  
<sup>27</sup> All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:  
and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father;  
neither doth any know the Father, save the Son,  
and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.

Luke x.

- <sup>21</sup> In that same hour he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said,  
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,  
that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding,  
and didst reveal them unto babes:  
yea, Father; for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.  
<sup>22</sup> All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:  
and no one knoweth *who* the Son is, save the Father;  
and *who* the Father is, save the Son,  
and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.

- <sup>28</sup> Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I  
<sup>29</sup> will give you rest. | Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me;  
for I am meek and lowly in heart: and 'ye shall find rest unto  
<sup>30</sup> your souls.'<sup>b</sup> | For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

## § 99. ON THE IMPORTANCE OF WORDS.

Matt. xii.

- <sup>33</sup> Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by its  
<sup>34</sup> fruit. | Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth  
<sup>35</sup> speaketh. | The good man out of his good treasure bringeth forth good things: and the evil man out of his evil treasure  
<sup>36</sup> bringeth forth evil things. | And I say unto you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in  
<sup>37</sup> the day of judgement. | For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. xiv. 18, 15.<sup>1</sup> M. children.<sup>b</sup> Jer. vi. 16.

## § 100. 'THIS GENERATION.'

Matt. xii.

- <sup>41</sup> The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it :  
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah ;  
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.  
<sup>42</sup> The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it :  
for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon ;  
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

Luke xi.

- <sup>32</sup> The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it :  
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah ;  
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.  
<sup>31</sup> The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with *the men of* this generation, and shall condemn *them* :  
for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon ;  
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

## § 101. 'THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT.'

Matt. xii.

- <sup>43</sup> But the unclean spirit, when he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest,  
<sup>44</sup> and findeth it not. Then he saith, I will return into my house whence I came out ;  
and when he is come,  
he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.  
<sup>45</sup> Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more evil than himself, and they enter in and dwell there :  
and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first.  
*Even so shall it be also unto this evil generation.*

Luke xi.

- <sup>24</sup> The unclean spirit when he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest ;  
and finding none, he saith,  
I will turn back unto my house whence I came out.  
<sup>25</sup> And when he is come,  
he findeth it swept and garnished.  
<sup>26</sup> Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more evil than himself ;  
and they enter in and dwell there :  
and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first.

## § 102. 'BLESSED ARE YOUR EYES.'

Matt. xiii.

- <sup>16</sup> But blessed are *your eyes*, for they see ;  
and *your ears*, for they hear.  
<sup>17</sup> For verily I say unto you,  
that many prophets and righteous men desired to see the things which ye see,  
and saw them not ;  
and to hear the things which ye hear,  
and heard them not.

Luke x.

- <sup>23</sup> And turning to the disciples, he said privately,  
Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see :  
<sup>24</sup> for I say unto you,  
that many prophets and kings desired to see the things which ye see,  
and saw them not ;  
and to hear the things which ye hear,  
and heard them not.

## § 103. PARABLES OF THE KINGDOM.

Matt. xiii.

- A.  
<sup>24</sup> Another parable set he before them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his  
<sup>25</sup> field : | but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares  
<sup>26</sup> also among the wheat, and went away. | But when the blade sprang up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares  
<sup>27</sup> also. | And the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field ?  
<sup>28</sup> whence then hath it tares ? | And he said unto them, An enemy hath done this. And the servants say unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up ? | But he saith,  
Nay ; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the  
<sup>30</sup> wheat with them. | Let both grow together until the harvest :  
and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers,  
Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them : but gather the wheat into my barn.  
B. [31-32. v. § 28.]

Luke xiii.

- C.  
<sup>33</sup> Another parable spake he unto them ;

- <sup>20</sup> And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken



§ 103. PARABLES OF THE KINGDOM (*continued*).

Matt. xiii.

The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven,  
which a woman took,  
and hid in three measures of meal,  
till it was all leavened.

D. [34-35. v. § 28.]

E.

<sup>36</sup> Then he left the multitudes, and went into the house : and  
his disciples came unto him, saying, Explain unto us the  
<sup>37</sup> parable of the tares of the field. | And he answered and said,  
<sup>38</sup> He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man ; | and the  
field is the world ; and the good seed, these are the sons of  
<sup>39</sup> the kingdom ; and the tares are the sons of the evil one ; | and  
the enemy that sowed them is the devil : and the harvest is  
<sup>40</sup> the end of the world ; and the reapers are angels. | As  
therefore the tares are gathered up and burned with fire ; so  
<sup>41</sup> shall it be in the end of the world. | The Son of man shall  
send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his  
kingdom 'all things that cause stumbling, and them that do  
<sup>42</sup> iniquity,' <sup>a</sup> | and shall cast them into the furnace of fire : there  
<sup>43</sup> shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. | Then 'shall the  
righteous shine forth' <sup>b</sup> as the sun in the kingdom of their  
Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.

F.

<sup>44</sup> The kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hidden in  
the field ; which a man found, and hid ; and in his joy he  
goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

G.

<sup>45</sup> Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a  
<sup>46</sup> merchant seeking goodly pearls : | and having found one  
pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and  
bought it.

H.

<sup>47</sup> Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast  
<sup>48</sup> into the sea, and gathered of every kind : | which, when it was  
filled, they drew up on the beach ; and they sat down, and  
gathered the good into vessels, but the bad they cast away. |  
<sup>49</sup> So shall it be in the end of the world : the angels shall come  
<sup>50</sup> forth, and sever the wicked from among the righteous, | and  
shall cast them into the furnace of fire : there shall be the  
weeping and gnashing of teeth.

I.

<sup>51</sup> Have ye understood all these things ? They say unto him,  
<sup>52</sup> Yea. | And he said unto them. Therefore every scribe who  
hath been made a disciple to the kingdom of heaven is like  
unto a man that is a householder, which bringeth forth out  
of his treasure things new and old.

Luke xiii.

<sup>21</sup> the kingdom of God ? It is like unto leaven,  
which a woman took,  
and hid in three measures of meal,  
till it was all leavened.

## § 104. 'SIGNS OF THE TIMES.'

Matt. xvi.

<sup>1</sup> And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him  
asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.

<sup>2</sup> But he answered and said unto them,  
When it is evening,  
ye say,  
It will be fair weather :

<sup>3</sup> And in the morning,  
It will be foul weather to-day :  
for the heaven is red and lowering.

Ye know how to discern  
the face of the heaven ;  
but ye cannot  
discern the signs of the times.

Luke xii.

<sup>54</sup> And he said to the multitudes also,  
When ye see a cloud rising in the west,  
straightway ye say,  
There cometh a shower ;  
and so it cometh to pass.

<sup>55</sup> And when ye see a south wind blowing,  
ye say, There will be a scorching heat ;  
and it cometh to pass.

<sup>56</sup> Ye hypocrites, ye know how to interpret  
the face of the earth and the heaven ;  
but how is it that ye know not  
how to interpret this time ?

<sup>a</sup> Zeph. i. 3.<sup>b</sup> Dan. xii. 3.



## § 105. THE COIN IN THE FISH'S MOUTH.

Matt. xvii.

<sup>24</sup> And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received the half-shekel came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master  
<sup>25</sup> pay the half-shekel ? | He saith, Yea. And when he came into the house, Jesus spake first to him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon ? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive toll or tribute ? from their sons, or from strangers ? |  
<sup>26</sup> And when he said, From strangers, Jesus said unto him,  
<sup>27</sup> Therefore the sons are free. | But, lest we cause them to stumble, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up ; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a shekel : that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

## § 106. THE LOST SHEEP.

Matt. xviii.

Luke xv.

<sup>12</sup> How think ye ?  
 If any man have a hundred sheep,  
 and one of them be gone astray,  
 doth he not leave the ninety and nine,  
 and go unto the mountains,  
 and seek that which goeth astray ?  
<sup>13</sup> And if so be that he find it,  
 verily I say unto you,  
 he rejoiceth over it

more than over the ninety and nine  
 which have not gone astray.

<sup>14</sup> Even so it is not the will  
 of <sup>1</sup> your Father which is in heaven,  
 that one of these little ones should perish.

<sup>1</sup> Now all the publicans and sinners were drawing near unto  
<sup>2</sup> him for to hear him. | And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

<sup>3</sup> And he spake unto them this parable, saying,  
<sup>4</sup> What man of you, having a hundred sheep,  
 and having lost one of them,  
 doth not leave the ninety and nine  
 in the wilderness,  
 and go after that which is lost, until he find it ?  
<sup>5</sup> And when he hath found it

he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing.

<sup>6</sup> And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me, for  
<sup>7</sup> I have found my sheep which was lost. | I say unto you, that even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth,  
 more than over ninety and nine righteous persons,  
 which need no repentance.

## § 107. ECCLESIASTICAL SAYINGS.

Matt. xviii.

Luke xvii.

A.  
<sup>15</sup> And if thy brother sin <sup>2</sup> against thee,  
 go, shew him his fault between thee and him alone :  
 if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.  
<sup>16</sup> But if he hear thee not, take with thee one or two more, that  
 'at the mouth of two witnesses or three every word may be  
<sup>17</sup> established.' <sup>a</sup> | And if he refuse to hear them, tell it unto the church : and if he refuse to hear the church also, let him be unto thee as the Gentile and the publican.

B.  
<sup>18</sup> Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven : and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

C.  
<sup>19</sup> Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. | For where two or  
<sup>20</sup> three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

<sup>a</sup> Deut. xix, 15.<sup>1</sup> M. my.<sup>2</sup> M. omit against thee.

## § 108. THE UNMERCIFUL SERVANT.

Matt. xviii.

Luke xvii.

<sup>21</sup> Then came Peter, and said to him,  
*Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me,  
 and I forgive him ?  
 until seven times ?*  
<sup>22</sup> Jesus saith unto him,  
*I say not unto thee, Until seven times ;  
 but, Until seventy times seven.*  
<sup>23</sup> Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain  
<sup>24</sup> king, which would make a reckoning with his servants. | And  
 when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him,  
<sup>25</sup> which owed him ten thousand talents. | But forasmuch as he  
 had not wherewith to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold,  
 and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment  
<sup>26</sup> to be made. | The servant therefore fell down and worshipped  
 him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee  
<sup>27</sup> all. | And the lord of that servant, being moved with compassion,  
<sup>28</sup> released him, and forgave him the debt. | But that servant went  
 out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him a  
 hundred pence : and he laid hold on him, and took him by the  
<sup>29</sup> throat, saying, Pay what thou owest. | So his fellow-servant  
 fell down and besought him, saying, Have patience with me,  
<sup>30</sup> and I will pay thee. | And he would not : but went and cast  
<sup>31</sup> him into prison, till he should pay that which was due. | So  
 when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were  
 exceeding sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that  
<sup>32</sup> was done. | Then his lord called him unto him, and saith to  
<sup>33</sup> him, Thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because  
<sup>34</sup> thou besoughtest me : | shouldst not thou also have had mercy  
 on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on thee ? | And his  
<sup>35</sup> lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he  
 should pay all that was due. | So shall also my heavenly  
 Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother  
 from your hearts.

<sup>4</sup> And if he sin against thee seven times in the day,  
 and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent ;  
 thou shalt forgive him.

## § 109. THE LABOURERS IN THE VINEYARD.

Matt. xx.

<sup>1</sup> For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a house-  
 holder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers  
<sup>2</sup> into his vineyard. | And when he had agreed with the labourers  
<sup>3</sup> for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. | And he  
 went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the  
<sup>4</sup> marketplace idle ; | and to them he said, Go ye also into the  
 vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they  
<sup>5</sup> went their way. | Again he went out about the sixth and the  
<sup>6</sup> ninth hour, and did likewise. | And about the eleventh hour  
 he went out, and found others standing ; and he saith unto  
<sup>7</sup> them, Why stand ye here all the day idle ? | They say unto him,  
 Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye  
<sup>8</sup> also into the vineyard. | And when even was come, the lord of  
 the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and  
 pay them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. |  
<sup>9</sup> And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour,  
<sup>10</sup> they received every man a penny. | And when the first came,  
 they supposed that they would receive more ; and they likewise  
<sup>11</sup> received every man a penny. | And when they received it, they  
<sup>12</sup> murmured against the householder, | saying, These last have  
 spent but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us,  
 which have borne the burden of the day and the scorching heat. |  
<sup>13</sup> But he answered and said to one of them, Friend, I do thee  
<sup>14</sup> no wrong : didst not thou agree with me for a penny ? | Take  
 up that which is thine, and go thy way ; it is my will to give  
<sup>15</sup> unto this last, even as unto thee. | Is it not lawful for me to do  
 what I will with mine own ? or is thine eye evil, because I am  
<sup>16</sup> good ? | So the last shall be first, and the first last.

## § 110. THE PARABLE OF THE TWO SONS.

Matt. xxi.

<sup>28</sup> But what think ye? A man had two sons; and he came to  
<sup>29</sup> the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in the vineyard. | And  
 he answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented  
 himself, and went. | And he came to the second, and said like-  
<sup>30</sup> wise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not. |  
<sup>31</sup> Whether of the twain did the will of his father? They say,  
 The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that  
 the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God  
<sup>32</sup> before you. | For John came unto you in the way of righteous-  
 ness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the  
 harlots believed him: and ye, when ye saw it, did not even  
 repent yourselves afterward, that ye might believe him.

## § 111. THE PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE FEAST.

Matt. xxii.

Luke xiv.

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus answered and spake again  
 in parables unto them, saying,  
<sup>2</sup> The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a certain king,  
 which made a marriage feast for his son,  
<sup>3</sup> and sent forth his servants  
 to call them that were bidden to the marriage feast :  
 and they would not come.  
<sup>4</sup> Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them that  
 are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner: my oxen  
 and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to  
<sup>5</sup> the marriage feast. | But they made light of it, and went  
 their ways, one to his own farm, another to his merchandise: |  
<sup>6</sup> and the rest laid hold on his servants, and entreated them  
 shamefully, and killed them.  
<sup>7</sup> But the king was wroth;  
 and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and  
 burned their city.  
<sup>8</sup> Then saith he to his servants,  
 The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not  
 worthy.

<sup>9</sup> Go ye therefore into the partings of the highways,  
 and as many as ye shall find,  
 bid to the marriage feast.  
<sup>10</sup> And those servants went out into the highways, and gathered  
 together all as many as they found, both bad and good :  
 and the wedding was filled with guests.

<sup>11</sup> But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw  
<sup>12</sup> there a man which had not on a wedding-garment: | and he  
 saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having  
<sup>13</sup> a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. | Then the king  
 said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him  
 out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and  
<sup>14</sup> gnashing of teeth. | For many are called, but few chosen.

<sup>15</sup> And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these  
 things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread  
 in the kingdom of God.  
<sup>16</sup> But he said unto him,

A certain man  
 made a great supper; and he bade many :  
<sup>17</sup> and he sent forth his servant at supper time  
 to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are  
 now ready.  
<sup>18</sup> And they all with one consent began to make excuse.  
 The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must  
<sup>19</sup> needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. | And  
 another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to  
<sup>20</sup> prove them: I pray thee have me excused. | And another  
 said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. |  
<sup>21</sup> And the servant came, and told his lord these things.

Then the master of the house being angry

said to his servant,

Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and  
 bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. |  
<sup>22</sup> And the servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is  
<sup>23</sup> done, and yet there is room. | And the lord said unto the  
 servant,  
 Go out into the highways and hedges,  
 and constrain them to come in,

that my house may be filled  
<sup>24</sup> For I say unto you, that none of those men which were  
 bidden shall taste of my supper.



## § 112. WOE TO SCRIBES AND PHARISEES.

Matt. xxiii.

Luke xi.

A. [1-10. v. § 70.]

B.

<sup>11</sup> But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. |  
<sup>12</sup> And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted.

C.

<sup>13</sup> But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye enter not in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter.<sup>1</sup>

D.

<sup>15</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him twofold more a son of hell than yourselves.

E.

<sup>16</sup> Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. | Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that hath sanctified the gold? | And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gift that is upon it, he is a debtor. | Ye blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? | He therefore that sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. | And he that sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. | And he that sweareth by the heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

F.

<sup>23</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye tithe mint and anise and cummin, and have left undone the weightier matters of the law, judgement, and mercy, and faith: but these ye ought to have done, and not to have left the other undone.  
<sup>24</sup> Ye blind guides, which strain out the gnat, and swallow the camel.

G.

<sup>25</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full from extortion and excess.  
<sup>26</sup> Thou blind Pharisee,

cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the outside thereof may become clean also.

H.

<sup>27</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. | Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

<sup>52</sup> Woe unto you lawyers!

for ye took away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

<sup>42</sup> But woe unto you Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and every herb, and pass over judgement and the love of God: but these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

<sup>37</sup> Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat. | And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner. | And the Lord said unto him,

Now do ye Pharisees

cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter; but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness.

<sup>40</sup> Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside also?

<sup>41</sup> Howbeit give for alms those things which are within; and behold, all things are clean unto you.

<sup>44</sup> Woe unto you!

for ye are as the tombs which appear not, and the men that walk over them know it not.

<sup>45</sup> And one of the lawyers answering saith unto him, Master, in saying this thou reproachest us also. | And he said, Woe unto you lawyers also! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

<sup>1</sup> M. add 14. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, even while for a pretence ye make long prayers: therefore ye shall receive greater condemnation.



§ 112. WOE TO SCRIBES AND PHARISEES (*continued*).

## Matt. xxiii.

<sup>29</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!  
for ye build the *sepulchres* of the prophets,  
and garnish the tombs of the righteous, and say,  
<sup>30</sup> If we had been in the days of our fathers,  
we should not have been partakers with them  
in the blood of the prophets.  
<sup>31</sup> Wherefore ye witness to yourselves,  
that ye are sons of them that slew the prophets.  
<sup>32</sup> Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.  
<sup>33</sup> Ye serpents, ye offspring of vipers,  
how shall ye escape the judgement of hell?  
<sup>34</sup> Therefore, behold, I send unto you prophets,

and wise men, and scribes:  
some of them shall ye kill and crucify;  
and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues,  
and persecute from city to city:  
<sup>35</sup> that upon you may come

all the righteous blood shed on the earth,  
from the blood of Abel the righteous  
unto the blood of Zachariah the son of Barachiah,  
whom ye slew between the sanctuary and the altar.  
<sup>36</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
all these things shall come upon this generation.

<sup>37</sup> O Jerusalem, Jerusalem,  
which killeth the prophets,  
and stoneth them that are sent unto her!  
how often would I have gathered thy children together,  
even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings,  
and ye would not!  
<sup>38</sup> Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate.'<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>39</sup> For I say unto you,  
Ye shall not see me henceforth,  
till ye shall say,  
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.'<sup>b</sup>

## § 113. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING.

## Matt. xxiv.

<sup>43</sup> But know this,  
that if the master of the house had known  
in what *watch* the thief was coming,  
he would have watched,  
and would not have suffered  
his house to be broken through.  
<sup>44</sup> Therefore be ye also ready:  
for in an hour that ye think not  
the Son of man cometh.

<sup>45</sup> Who then is the faithful and wise servant,  
whom his lord hath set over his household,  
to give them their food in due season?  
<sup>46</sup> Blessed is that servant,  
whom his lord when he cometh  
shall find so doing.  
<sup>47</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
that he will set him over all that he hath.

<sup>a</sup> Jer. xxii. 5, xii. 7.

## Luke xi.

<sup>47</sup> Woe unto you!  
for ye build the tombs of the prophets, }  
and your fathers killed them.  
<sup>48</sup> So ye are witnesses and consent unto the works of your fathers:  
for they killed them, and ye build their tombs.

<sup>49</sup> Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them  
prophets  
and apostles;  
and some of them they shall kill

and persecute;  
<sup>50</sup> that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from }  
the foundation of the world,  
may be required of this generation;  
<sup>51</sup> from the blood of Abel  
unto the blood of Zachariah,  
who perished between the altar and the sanctuary:  
yea, I say unto you,  
it shall be required of this generation.

## Luke xiii.

<sup>34</sup> O Jerusalem, Jerusalem,  
which killeth the prophets,  
and stoneth them that are sent unto her!  
how often would I have gathered thy children together,  
even as a hen gathereth her own brood under her wings,  
and ye would not!  
<sup>35</sup> Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate':<sup>a</sup>  
and I say unto you,  
Ye shall not see me  
until ye shall say,  
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.'<sup>b</sup>

## Luke xii.

<sup>39</sup> But know this,  
that if the master of the house had known  
in what *hour* the thief was coming,  
he would have watched,  
and not have left  
his house to be broken through.  
<sup>40</sup> Be ye also ready:  
for in an hour that ye think not  
the Son of man cometh.  
<sup>41</sup> And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or  
<sup>42</sup> even unto all? | And the Lord said,  
Who then is the faithful and wise steward,  
whom his lord shall set over his household,  
to give them their portion of food in due season?  
<sup>43</sup> Blessed is that servant,  
whom his lord when he cometh  
shall find so doing.  
<sup>44</sup> Of a truth I say unto you,  
that he will set him over all that he hath.

<sup>b</sup> Ps. cxviii. 26.

§ 113. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING (*continued*).

Matt. xxiv.

<sup>43</sup> But if that *evil* servant shall say in his heart,  
My lord *tarrieth* ;  
<sup>43</sup> and shall begin to beat his *fellow*-servants,  
  
and shall eat and drink *with* the drunken ;  
<sup>50</sup> the lord of that servant shall come  
in a day when he expecteth not,  
and in an hour when he knoweth not,  
<sup>51</sup> and shall cut him asunder,  
and appoint his portion with the *hypocrites* :  
*there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

Luke xii.

<sup>45</sup> But if that servant shall say in his heart,  
My lord *delayeth his coming* ;  
and shall begin to beat the *menservants* and the *maid*-  
servants,  
and to eat and drink, *and to be drunken* ;  
<sup>46</sup> the lord of that servant shall come  
in a day when he expecteth not,  
and in an hour when he knoweth not,  
and shall cut him asunder,  
and appoint his portion with the *unfaithful*.  
  
<sup>47</sup> *And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and made not  
ready, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with  
many stripes ; | but he that knew not, and did things worthy  
of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. And to whomso-  
ever much is given, of him shall much be required : and to  
whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.*

## § 114. THE PARABLE OF THE TEN VIRGINS.

Matt. xxv.

<sup>1</sup> *Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten  
virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the  
2 bridegroom. | And five of them were foolish, and five were  
3 wise. | For the foolish, when they took their lamps, took no oil  
4 with them : | but the wise took oil in their vessels with their  
5 lamps. | Now while the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered  
6 and slept. | But at midnight there is a cry, Behold, the  
7 bridegroom ! Come ye forth to meet him. | Then all those  
8 virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. | And the foolish said  
9 out. | But the wise answered, saying, Peradventure there will  
not be enough for us and you : go ye rather to them that sell,  
10 and buy for yourselves. | And while they went away to buy,  
the bridegroom came ; and they that were ready went in with  
11 him to the marriage feast : and the door was shut. | Afterward  
come also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. |  
12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you  
13 not. | Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour.*

[Cf. Luke xii.

<sup>35</sup> Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning ;  
<sup>36</sup> and be ye yourselves like unto men looking for their lord,  
when he shall return from the marriage feast ; that,  
when he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open  
<sup>37</sup> unto him. | Blessed are those servants, whom the lord  
when he cometh shall find watching : verily I say unto you,  
that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to  
<sup>38</sup> meat, and shall come and serve them. | And if he shall come  
in the second watch, and if in the third, and find them so,  
blessed are those servants.]

## § 115. THE PARABLE OF THE TALENTS.

Matt. xxv.

<sup>14</sup> *For it is as when a man,  
going into another country,  
  
called his own servants,  
and delivered unto them his goods.  
15 And unto one he gave five talents,  
to another two, to another one ;  
to each according to his several ability ;  
and he went on his journey.*

Luke xix.

<sup>11</sup> *And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable,  
because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they supposed  
12 that the kingdom of God was immediately to appear. | He  
said therefore,  
A certain nobleman  
went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom,  
and to return.  
13 And he called ten servants of his,  
and gave them ten pounds,  
and said unto them, Trade ye herewith till I come.*

<sup>16</sup> *Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded  
17 with them, and made other five talents. | In like manner he  
18 also that received the two gained other two. | But he that  
received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid  
his lord's money.*

<sup>14</sup> *But his citizens hated him, and sent an embassy after him,  
saying, We will not that this man reign over us.*

§ 115. THE PARABLE OF THE TALENTS (*continued*).

Matt. xxv.

Luke xix.

- <sup>19</sup> Now after a long time  
the lord of those servants cometh,  
and maketh a reckoning with them.
- <sup>20</sup> And he that received the five talents came  
and brought other five talents, saying,  
Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents :  
lo, I have gained other five talents.
- <sup>21</sup> His lord said unto him,  
Well done, good and faithful servant :  
thou hast been faithful over a few things,  
I will set thee over many things :  
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
- <sup>22</sup> And he also that received the two talents came and said,  
Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents :  
lo, I have gained other two talents.
- <sup>23</sup> His lord said unto him,  
Well done, good and faithful servant ;  
thou hast been faithful over a few things,  
I will set thee over many things :  
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
- <sup>24</sup> And he also that had received the one talent came and said, Lord,  
I knew thee that thou art a hard man,  
reaping where thou didst not sow,  
and gathering where thou didst not scatter :
- <sup>25</sup> and I was afraid, and went away  
and hid thy talent in the earth :  
lo, thou hast thine own.
- <sup>26</sup> But his lord answered and said unto him,  
Thou wicked and slothful servant,  
thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not,  
and gather where I did not scatter ;
- <sup>27</sup> thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the bankers,  
and at my coming I should have received back  
mine own with interest.
- <sup>28</sup> Take ye away therefore the talent from him,  
and give it unto him that hath the ten talents.
- <sup>29</sup> For unto every one that hath shall be given,  
and he shall have abundance :  
but from him that hath not,  
even that which he hath shall be taken away.
- <sup>30</sup> And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer dark-  
ness : there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

- <sup>15</sup> And it came to pass,  
when he was come back again, having received the kingdom, }  
that he commanded these servants, unto whom he had given }  
the money,  
to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained  
by trading.
- <sup>16</sup> And the first came before him,  
saying,  
Lord, thy pound  
hath made ten pounds more.
- <sup>17</sup> And he said unto him,  
Well done, thou good servant :  
because thou wast found faithful in a very little,  
have thou authority over ten cities.
- <sup>18</sup> And the second came, saying,  
Thy pound, Lord,  
hath made five pounds.
- <sup>19</sup> And he said unto him also,

Be thou also over five cities.

- <sup>20a</sup> And another came, saying, Lord,  
<sup>21b</sup> because thou art an austere man :  
thou takest up that thou layedst not down, }  
and reapest that thou didst not sow. }
- <sup>21a</sup> for I feared thee,  
<sup>20b</sup> behold, here is thy pound, }  
which I kept laid up in a napkin : }
- <sup>22</sup> He saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee,  
thou wicked servant.  
Thou knewest that I am an austere man, taking up that I }  
laid not down, }  
and reaping that I did not sow ;
- <sup>23</sup> then wherefore gavest thou not my money into the bank,  
and I at my coming should have received  
it with interest ?
- <sup>24</sup> And he said unto them that stood by, Take away from him  
the pound,  
and give it unto him that hath the ten pounds.
- <sup>25</sup> And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.
- <sup>26</sup> I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given ;  
but from him that hath not,  
even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.
- <sup>27</sup> Howbeit these mine enemies, which would not that I should  
reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

## § 116. A PARABLE OF JUDGEMENT.

Matt. xxv.

- <sup>31</sup> But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, 'and all  
the angels with him,'<sup>a</sup> then shall he sit on the throne of his  
<sup>32</sup> glory : | and before him shall be gathered all the nations :  
and he shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd  
<sup>33</sup> separateth the sheep from the goats : | and he shall set the  
<sup>34</sup> sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. | Then  
shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye  
blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you  
<sup>35</sup> from the foundation of the world : | for I was an hungred,

<sup>a</sup> Zech. xiv. 5.



§ 116. A PARABLE OF JUDGEMENT (*continued*).

Matt. xxv.

and ye gave me meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink :  
<sup>36</sup> I was a stranger, and ye took me in ; | naked, and ye clothed me : I was sick, and ye visited me : I was in prison, and ye  
<sup>37</sup> came unto me. | Then shall the righteous answer him, saying,  
 Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee ? or  
<sup>38</sup> athirst, and gave thee drink ? | And when saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in ? or naked, and clothed thee ? |  
<sup>39</sup> And when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee ? | And the King shall answer and say unto them,  
 Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of  
<sup>41</sup> these my brethren, even these least, ye did it unto me. | Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the  
<sup>42</sup> devil and his angels : | for I was an hungred, and ye gave  
<sup>43</sup> me no meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink : | I was a stranger, and ye took me not in ; naked, and ye clothed me  
<sup>44</sup> not ; sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. | Then shall they also answer, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and  
<sup>45</sup> did not minister unto thee ? | Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not  
<sup>46</sup> unto one of these least, ye did it not unto me. | And 'these' shall go away 'into eternal punishment : but the' righteous 'into eternal life.' <sup>a</sup>

## § 117. THE DEATH OF JUDAS.

Matt. xxvii.

<sup>3</sup> Then Judas, which betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty  
<sup>4</sup> pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, | saying, I have sinned in that I betrayed innocent blood. But they said,  
<sup>5</sup> What is that to us ? see thou to it. | And he cast down the pieces of silver into the sanctuary, and departed ; and he  
<sup>6</sup> went away and hanged himself. | And the chief priests took the pieces of silver, and said, It is not lawful to put them  
<sup>7</sup> into the treasury, since it is the price of blood. | And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury  
<sup>8</sup> strangers in. | Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day. | Then was fulfilled that which was  
<sup>9</sup> spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, 'And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was priced, whom  
<sup>10</sup> certain of the children of Israel did price ; | and they gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.' <sup>b</sup>

## § 118. THE GUARD (I).

Matt. xxvii.

<sup>62</sup> Now on the morrow, which is the day after the Preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees were gathered together  
<sup>63</sup> unto Pilate, | saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I rise again. |  
<sup>64</sup> Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest haply his disciples come and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead ;  
<sup>65</sup> and the last error will be worse than the first. | Pilate said unto them, Ye have a guard : go your way, make it as sure  
<sup>66</sup> as ye can. | So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, seating the stone, the guard being with them.

<sup>a</sup> Dan. xii. 2.<sup>b</sup> Zech. xi. 13.



## § 119. THE GUARD. (II.)

Matt. xxviii.

<sup>11</sup> Now while they were going, behold, some of the guard  
<sup>12</sup> came into the city, and told unto the chief priests all the  
<sup>13</sup> things that were come to pass. | And when they were as-  
<sup>14</sup> sembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave  
<sup>15</sup> large money unto the soldiers, | saying, Say ye, His disciples  
<sup>16</sup> came by night, and stole him away while we slept. | And if  
<sup>17</sup> this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and  
<sup>18</sup> rid you of care. | So they took the money, and did as they  
<sup>19</sup> were taught : and this saying was spread abroad among the  
<sup>20</sup> Jews, and continueth until this day.

## § 120. CONCLUSION.

Matt. xxviii.

<sup>1</sup> But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, unto the moun-  
<sup>2</sup> tain where Jesus had appointed them. | And when they saw  
<sup>3</sup> him, they worshipped him : but some doubted. | And Jesus  
<sup>4</sup> came to them and spake unto them, saying, All authority  
<sup>5</sup> hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth. | Go ye  
<sup>6</sup> therefore, and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing  
<sup>7</sup> them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the  
<sup>8</sup> Holy Ghost : | teaching them to observe all things whatsoever  
<sup>9</sup> I commanded you : and lo, I am with you alway, even unto  
<sup>10</sup> the end of the world.

## PART III

### ST. LUKE

(OMITTING PASSAGES ALREADY PRINTED IN PART I)

#### § 121. THE PROMISE OF THE BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke i.

<sup>5</sup> *There was in the days of Herod, king of Judaea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abijah: and he had a wife of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. | And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. | And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in years.*

<sup>8</sup> *Now it came to pass, while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, | according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to enter into the temple of the Lord and burn incense. | And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the hour of incense. | And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. | And Zacharias was troubled when he saw him, and fear fell upon him. | But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: because thy supplication is heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. | And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. | For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and 'he shall drink no wine nor strong drink';<sup>a</sup> and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. | And many of the children of Israel shall he turn unto the Lord their God. | And he shall go before his face in the spirit and power of 'Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children,'<sup>b</sup> and the disobedient to walk in the wisdom of the just; to make ready for the Lord a people prepared for him. | And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. | And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and I was sent to speak unto thee, and to bring thee these good tidings. | And behold, thou shalt be silent and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall come to pass, because thou believedst not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season. | And the people were waiting for Zacharias, and they marvelled while he tarried in the temple. | And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: and he continued making signs unto them, and remained dumb. |*

<sup>23</sup> *And it came to pass, when the days of his ministration were fulfilled, he departed unto his house.*

<sup>24</sup> *And after these days Elisabeth his wife conceived; and she hid herself five months, saying, | Thus hath the Lord done unto me in the days wherein he looked upon me, to take away my reproach among men.*

#### § 122. THE ANNUNCIATION.

Luke i.

<sup>26</sup> *Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, | to a virgin betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. | And he came in*

<sup>a</sup> Num. vi. 3.

<sup>b</sup> Mal. iv. 4-5.

§ 122. THE ANNUNCIATION (*continued*).

Luke i.

unto her, and said, *Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee.*<sup>1</sup> | But she was greatly troubled at the saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this might be. | And the angel said unto her, *Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.* | And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. | He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most High: and the Lord God shall give unto him 'the throne of' his father 'David: | and he shall reign' over the house of Jacob 'forever';<sup>a</sup> and of his kingdom there shall be no end. | And Mary said unto the angel, *How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?* | And the angel answered and said unto her, *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Most High shall overshadow thee: wherefore also that which is to be born*<sup>2</sup> *shall be called holy, the Son of God.* | And behold, Elisabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her that was called barren. | 'For no word from God shall be void of power.'<sup>b</sup> | And Mary said, *Behold, the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word.* And the angel departed from her.

## § 123. THE VISITATION.

Luke i.

And Mary arose in these days and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Judah; | and entered into the house of Zacharias and saluted Elisabeth. | And it came to pass, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost; | and she lifted up her voice with a loud cry, and said, *Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.* | And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come unto me? | For behold, when the voice of thy salutation came into mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. | And blessed is she that believed; for there shall be a fulfilment of the things which have been spoken to her from the Lord. | And Mary said, *My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. For he hath looked upon the low estate of his handmaiden: For behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; And holy is his name. And his mercy is unto generations and generations On them that fear him. He hath shewed strength with his arm; He hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their heart. He hath put down princes from their thrones, And hath exalted them of low degree. The hungry he hath filled with good things; And the rich he hath sent empty away. He hath holpen Israel his servant, That he might remember mercy (As he spake unto our fathers) Toward Abraham and his seed for ever. And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned unto her house.*

<sup>a</sup> Isa. ix. 7.<sup>b</sup> Gen. xviii. 14.<sup>1</sup> M. *add* blessed art thou among women.<sup>2</sup> M. *add* of thee.

## § 124. THE BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.

## Luke i.

<sup>57</sup> Now Elisabeth's time was fulfilled that she should be  
<sup>58</sup> delivered; and she brought forth a son. | And her neighbours  
 and her kinsfolk heard that the Lord had magnified his  
<sup>59</sup> mercy towards her; and they rejoiced with her. | And it  
 came to pass on the eighth day, that they came to circumcise  
 the child; and they would have called him Zacharias, after  
<sup>60</sup> the name of his father. | And his mother answered and said,  
<sup>61</sup> Not so; but he shall be called John. | And they said unto  
 her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. |  
<sup>62</sup> And they made signs to his father, what he would have him  
<sup>63</sup> called. | And he asked for a writing tablet, and wrote,  
<sup>64</sup> saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all. | And  
 his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed,  
<sup>65</sup> and he spake, blessing God. | And fear came on all that  
 dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised  
<sup>66</sup> abroad throughout all the hill country of Judaea. | And all  
 that heard them laid them up in their heart, saying, What  
 then shall this child be? For the hand of the Lord was  
 with him.  
<sup>67</sup> And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost,  
 and prophesied, saying,  
<sup>68</sup> Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel;  
 For he hath visited and wrought redemption for his people,  
<sup>69</sup> And hath raised up a horn of salvation for us  
 In the house of his servant David  
<sup>70</sup> (As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets which have  
 been since the world began),  
<sup>71</sup> Salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that  
 hate us;  
<sup>72</sup> To shew mercy towards our fathers,  
 And to remember his holy covenant;  
<sup>73</sup> The oath which he sware unto Abraham our father,  
<sup>74</sup> To grant unto us that we being delivered out of the hand  
 of our enemies  
 Should serve him without fear,  
<sup>75</sup> In holiness and righteousness before him all our days.  
<sup>76</sup> Yea and thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the  
 Most High:  
 For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to make  
 ready his ways;  
<sup>77</sup> To give knowledge of salvation unto his people  
 In the remission of their sins,  
<sup>78</sup> Because of the tender mercy of our God,  
 Whereby the dayspring from on high <sup>1</sup> shall visit us,  
<sup>79</sup> To shine upon them that sit in darkness and the shadow  
 of death;  
 To guide our feet into the way of peace.  
<sup>80</sup> And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was  
 in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

## § 125. THE NATIVITY.

## Luke ii.

<sup>1</sup> Now it came to pass in those days, there went out a decree  
 from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be enrolled. |  
<sup>2</sup> This was the first enrolment made when Quirinius was  
<sup>3</sup> governor of Syria. | And all went to enrol themselves, every  
<sup>4</sup> one to his own city. | And Joseph also went up from Galilee,  
 out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, to the city of David,  
 which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and  
<sup>5</sup> family of David; | to enrol himself with Mary, who was  
<sup>6</sup> betrothed to him, being great with child. | And it came to  
 pass, while they were there, the days were fulfilled that she

<sup>1</sup> M. hath visited.



§ 125. THE NATIVITY (*continued*).

Luke ii.

<sup>7</sup> should be delivered. | And she brought forth her firstborn son ; and she wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

<sup>8</sup> And there were shepherds in the same country abiding in the field, and keeping watch by night over their flock. | And an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them : and they were sore afraid. | <sup>9</sup> And the angel said unto them, Be not afraid ; for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all the <sup>1</sup> people : | for there is born to you this day in the city of <sup>2</sup> David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. | And this is the sign unto you ; Ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling <sup>3</sup> clothes, and lying in a manger. | And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

<sup>4</sup> Glory to God in the highest,  
And on earth <sup>1</sup> peace among men in whom he is well pleased.

<sup>5</sup> And it came to pass, when the angels went away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing that is come <sup>6</sup> to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. | And they came with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and <sup>7</sup> the babe lying in the manger. | And when they saw it, they made known concerning the saying which was spoken to them <sup>8</sup> about this child. | And all that heard it wondered at the <sup>9</sup> things which were spoken unto them by the shepherds. | But Mary kept all these sayings, pondering them in her heart. | <sup>10</sup> And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, even as it was spoken unto them.

## § 126. THE CIRCUMCISION AND PRESENTATION.

Luke ii.

And when eight days were fulfilled for circumcising him, his name was called Jesus, which was so called by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

<sup>2</sup> And when the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were fulfilled, they brought him up to Jerusalem, <sup>3</sup> to present him to the Lord | (as it is written in the law of the Lord, 'Every male that openeth the womb shall be called <sup>4</sup> holy to the Lord'<sup>a</sup>), | and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, 'A pair of turtle-doves, <sup>5</sup> or two young pigeons.'<sup>b</sup> | And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon ; and this man was righteous and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel : <sup>6</sup> and the Holy Spirit was upon him. | And it had been revealed unto him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see <sup>7</sup> death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. | And he came in the Spirit into the temple : and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might do concerning him after <sup>8</sup> the custom of the law, | then he received him into his arms, and blessed God, and said,

<sup>9</sup> Now lettest thou thy servant depart, O Lord,  
According to thy word, in peace ;  
<sup>10</sup> For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,  
Which thou hast prepared before the face of all peoples ;  
<sup>1</sup> A light for revelation to the Gentiles,  
<sup>2</sup> And the glory of thy people Israel.

<sup>3</sup> And his father and his mother were marvelling at the things <sup>4</sup> which were spoken concerning him ; | and Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the falling and rising up of many in Israel ; and for

<sup>a</sup> Ex. xiii. 12.<sup>b</sup> Lev. xii. 8.<sup>1</sup> M. peace, good pleasure among men.

§ 126. THE CIRCUMCISION AND PRESENTATION (*continued*).

## Luke ii.

<sup>35</sup> a sign which is spoken against; | yea and a sword shall pierce through thine own soul; that thoughts out of many  
<sup>36</sup> hearts may be revealed. | And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher (she was of a great age, having lived with a husband seven  
<sup>37</sup> years from her virginity, | and she had been a widow even for fourscore and four years), which departed not from the temple, worshipping with fastings and supplications night  
<sup>38</sup> and day. | And coming up at that very hour she gave thanks unto God, and spake of him to all them that were looking  
<sup>39</sup> for the redemption of Jerusalem. | And when they had accomplished all things that were according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.  
<sup>40</sup> And the child grew, and waxed strong, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him.

## § 127. JESUS AND THE DOCTORS IN THE TEMPLE.

## Luke ii.

<sup>41</sup> And his parents went every year to Jerusalem at the feast  
<sup>42</sup> of the passover. | And when he was twelve years old, they went up after the custom of the feast; | and when they had fulfilled the days, as they were returning, the boy Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and his parents knew it not; |  
<sup>43</sup> but supposing him to be in the company, they went a day's journey; and they sought for him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance: | and when they found him not, they returned  
<sup>44</sup> to Jerusalem, seeking for him. | And it came to pass, after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them  
<sup>45</sup> questions: | and all that heard him were amazed at his understanding and his answers. | And when they saw him, they were astonished: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I  
<sup>46</sup> sought thee sorrowing. | And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be in my Father's house? | And they understood not the saying which he spake  
<sup>47</sup> unto them. | And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth; and he was subject unto them: and his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.  
<sup>48</sup> And Jesus advanced in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and men.

## § 128. THE GENEALOGY.

## Luke iii.

<sup>23</sup> And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age, being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the  
<sup>24</sup> son of Heli, | the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, | the son of  
<sup>25</sup> Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, | the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias,  
<sup>26</sup> the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Joda, | the son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri, | the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of  
<sup>27</sup> Er, | the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, | the son of Symeon, the son of Judas, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam, the son of Eliakim, | the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of  
<sup>28</sup> Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, | the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of Salmon the son of Nahshon, | the son of Amminadab, the son of

[Cf. Matt. i.

<sup>2</sup> Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judah and his brethren; | and Judah begat Perez and Zerah of Tamar; and Perez begat Herzon and Hezron begat Ram; | and Ram begat Amminadab and Amminadab begat Nahshon; and Nahshon begat Salmon; | and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth; | and Obed begat Jesse; and Jesse begat David the king.  
 And David begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Uriah; | and Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat Abijah; and Abijah begat Asa; | and Asa begat Jehoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Uzziah; | and Uzziah begat Jotham; and Jotham begat Ahaz; and Ahaz begat Hezekiah; | and Hezekiah begat Manasseh; and Manasseh begat Amon; and Amon begat Josiah; | and Josiah begat Jechoniah and his brethren, at the time of the carrying away to Babylon.

§ 128. THE GENEALOGY (*continued*).

## Luke iii.

*Arni, the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, the son of Judah, |  
 34 the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the  
 35 son of Terah, the son of Nahor, | the son of Serug, the son of  
 36 Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Shelah, |  
 37 the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem,  
 the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, | the son of Methuselah,  
 38 the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel,  
 the son of Cainan, | the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son  
 of Adam, the son of God.*

[Cf. Matt. i.

<sup>12</sup> And after the carrying away to Babylon, Jechoniah  
<sup>13</sup> begat Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel; | and  
 Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim;  
<sup>14</sup> and Eliakim begat Azor; | and Azor begat Sadoc; and  
<sup>15</sup> Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; | and Eliud  
 begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan  
<sup>16</sup> begat Jacob; | and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of  
 Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.  
<sup>17</sup> So all the generations from Abraham unto David are  
 fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying  
 away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the  
 carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen  
 generations.]

## § 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN.

## Luke vi.

## Matt. v.

<sup>17</sup> . . . and he came down with them,  
 and stood on a level place,  
 and a great multitude of his disciples,  
 and a great number of the people  
 from all Judaea and Jerusalem,  
 and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon,  
 which came to hear him,  
 and to be healed of their diseases;  
<sup>18</sup> and they that were troubled with unclean spirits  
 were healed.  
<sup>19</sup> And all the multitude sought to touch him:  
 for power came forth from him,  
 and healed them all.

<sup>1</sup> And seeing the multitudes,  
 he went up into the mountain:

<sup>20</sup> And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said,  
 B. Blessed are ye poor:  
 for yours is the kingdom of God.  
<sup>21</sup> Blessed are ye that hunger now:  
 for ye shall be filled.  
 Blessed are ye that weep now:  
 for ye shall laugh.

and when he had sat down,  
 his disciples came unto him:  
<sup>2</sup> and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

<sup>3</sup> Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you,  
 and when they shall separate you from their company,  
 and reproach you,  
 and cast out your name as evil,  
 for the Son of man's sake.  
<sup>23</sup> Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy:  
 for behold, your reward is great in heaven:  
 for in the same manner  
 did their fathers unto the prophets.

<sup>3</sup> Blessed are the poor in spirit:  
 for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.  
<sup>6</sup> Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness:  
 for they shall be filled.  
<sup>4</sup> Blessed are 'they that mourn':<sup>a</sup>  
 for they 'shall be comforted'.<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>5</sup> Blessed are 'the meek':<sup>c</sup>  
 for they 'shall inherit the earth'.<sup>d</sup>  
<sup>7</sup> Blessed are the merciful:  
 for they shall obtain mercy.  
<sup>8</sup> Blessed are 'the pure in heart':<sup>e</sup>  
 for they shall see God.  
<sup>9</sup> Blessed are the peacemakers:  
 for they shall be called sons of God.  
<sup>10</sup> Blessed are they that have been persecuted for righteousness'  
 sake:  
 for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.  
<sup>11</sup> Blessed are ye when men shall  
 reproach you, and persecute you,  
 and say all manner of evil against you falsely,  
 for my sake.  
<sup>12</sup> Rejoice, and be exceeding glad:  
 for great is your reward in heaven:  
 for so  
 persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. lxi. 1.<sup>b</sup> *ibid.*<sup>c</sup> Ps. xxxvii. 11.<sup>d</sup> *ibid.*<sup>e</sup> Ps. xxiv. 4.<sup>1</sup> M. transpose verses 4 and 5.



§ 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN (*continued*).

Luke vi.

Matt. v, vii.

C.

- <sup>24</sup> But woe unto you that are rich!  
for ye have received your consolation.  
<sup>25</sup> Woe unto you, ye that are full now!  
for ye shall hunger.  
Woe unto you, ye that laugh now!  
for ye shall mourn and weep.  
<sup>26</sup> Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you!  
for in the same manner  
did their fathers to the false prophets.

D.

- <sup>27</sup> But I say unto you *which hear*,  
Love your enemies,  
do good to them that hate you.  
<sup>28</sup> bless them that curse you,  
pray for them that despitefully use you.  
<sup>29</sup> To him that smiteth thee on the one cheek  
offer also the other;  
and from him  
that taketh away thy cloke  
withhold not thy coat also.  
<sup>30</sup> Give to every one that asketh thee;  
and of him that taketh away thy goods  
ask them not again.  
<sup>31</sup> And as ye would  
that men should do to you,  
do ye also to them likewise.  
<sup>32</sup> And if ye love them that love you,  
what *thank* have ye?  
for even sinners love those that love them.  
<sup>33</sup> And if ye do good to them  
that do good to you,  
what *thank* have ye?  
for even sinners do the same.  
<sup>34</sup> And if ye lend to them  
of whom ye hope to receive,  
what *thank* have ye?  
even sinners lend to sinners  
to receive again as much.  
<sup>35</sup> But love your enemies, and do them good,  
and lend, <sup>1</sup> never despairing;  
and your reward shall be great,  
and ye shall be sons of the Most High:  
for he is kind toward the unthankful and evil.

E.

- <sup>36</sup> Be ye merciful,  
even as your Father 'is merciful.'<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>37</sup> And judge not,  
and ye shall not be judged:  
and condemn not,  
and ye shall not be condemned:  
release, and ye shall be released:  
<sup>38</sup> give, and it shall be given unto you;  
good measure, pressed down,  
shaken together, running over,  
shall they give into your bosom.  
For with what measure ye mete  
it shall be measured to you again.

F.

- <sup>39</sup> And he spake also a parable unto them,  
Can the blind guide the blind?

- <sup>44</sup> . . . but I say unto you,  
Love your enemies,

and pray for them that persecute you;

- <sup>39</sup> . . . but whosoever smiteth thee on thy right cheek,  
turn to him the other also.

- <sup>40</sup> And if any man would go to law with thee  
and take away thy coat, }  
let him have thy cloke also. }

- <sup>42</sup> Give to him that asketh thee,  
and from him that would borrow of thee  
turn not thou away.

- vii. <sup>12a</sup> All things therefore whatsoever ye would  
that men should do unto you,  
even so do ye also unto them:

- v. <sup>46</sup> For if ye love them that love you,  
what reward have ye?  
do not even the publicans the same?

- <sup>47</sup> And if ye salute  
your brethren only,  
what do ye more than others?  
do not even the Gentiles the same?

- [<sup>42</sup> Give to him that asketh thee,  
and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

- <sup>45</sup> . . . that ye may be sons of your Father which is in heaven  
for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and the good,  
and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust.

- <sup>48</sup> 'Ye' therefore 'shall be perfect,'<sup>a</sup>  
as your heavenly Father is perfect.

- vii. <sup>1</sup> Judge not,  
that ye be not judged.

- <sup>2</sup> For with what judgement ye judge,  
ye shall be judged:  
and with what measure ye mete,  
it shall be measured unto you.

Matt. xv.

- <sup>14</sup> [Let them alone: they are blind guides.]  
And if the blind guide the blind,

<sup>a</sup> Deut. xviii. 13.<sup>b</sup> Ps. ciii. 8.<sup>1</sup> M. despairing of no man.



§ 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN (*continued*).

## Luke vi.

shall they *not* both fall into a pit ?

<sup>40</sup> The disciple is not above his master :

*but every one when he is perfected  
shall be as his master.*

<sup>41</sup> And why beholdest thou the mote  
that is in thy brother's eye,  
but considerest not the beam  
that is in thine own eye ?

<sup>42</sup> Or how *canst* thou say to thy brother,  
*Brother*, let me cast out the mote  
*that is in thine eye*,  
*when thou beholdest not the beam  
that is in thine own eye ?*  
Thou hypocrite,  
cast out first the beam  
out of thine own eye,  
and then shalt thou see clearly  
to cast out the mote  
*that is in thy brother's eye.*

<sup>43</sup> For there is no good tree  
that bringeth forth *corrupt* fruit ;

nor again a corrupt tree  
that bringeth forth good fruit.

<sup>44</sup> For *each* tree is known by its *own* fruit.

For of thorns men do not gather figs,

nor of a *bramble bush* gather they grapes.

<sup>45</sup> The good man out of the good treasure *of his heart*

bringeth forth that which is good ;  
and the evil man out of the evil treasure

bringeth forth that which is evil :

for out of the abundance of the heart

*his* mouth speaketh.

<sup>46</sup> *And why call ye me, Lord, Lord,*

and do *not* the things which I say ?

<sup>47</sup> Every one that *cometh unto me*,  
and heareth my words,  
and doeth them,  
*I will shew you unto whom he is like :*

<sup>48</sup> *he is like a man  
building a house,  
who digged and went deep,  
and laid a foundation  
upon the rock :  
and when a flood arose,*

## Matt. x.

both shall fall into a pit.

<sup>24</sup> A disciple is not above his master,  
*nor a servant above his lord.*

<sup>25</sup> *It is enough for the disciple  
that he be as his master,  
and the servant as his lord.*

## Matt. vii.

<sup>3</sup> And why beholdest thou the mote  
that is in thy brother's eye,  
but considerest not the beam  
that is in thine own eye ?

<sup>4</sup> Or how *wilt* thou say to thy brother,  
Let me cast out the mote  
*out of thine eye ;  
and lo, the beam  
is in thine own eye ?*

<sup>5</sup> Thou hypocrite,  
cast out first the beam  
out of thine own eye ;  
and then shalt thou see clearly  
to cast out the mote  
*out of thy brother's eye.*

## Matt. xii.

<sup>18</sup> A good tree  
cannot bring forth *evil*  
fruit,  
neither can a corrupt tree  
bring forth good fruit.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore by their fruits }  
ye shall know them. }  
<sup>16</sup> By their fruits ye shall }  
know them. }  
Do men gather grapes }  
of thorns, }  
or figs of *thistles* ? }

<sup>33</sup> *Either make the tree good  
and its fruit good ;*

*or make the tree corrupt,  
and its fruit corrupt :  
for the tree is known by  
its fruit.*

<sup>35</sup> The good man out of his  
good treasure  
bringeth forth good things:  
and the evil man out of  
his evil treasure  
bringeth forth evil things.

<sup>34</sup> *Ye offspring of vipers, how  
can ye, being evil, speak  
good things ?  
for out of the abundance  
of the heart  
the mouth speaketh.*

<sup>21</sup> *Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord,  
shall enter into the kingdom of heaven ;  
but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.*

<sup>24</sup> Every one *therefore*  
which heareth *these* words of mine,  
and doeth them,

*shall be likened unto a wise man,  
which built his house*

upon the rock :

<sup>25</sup> *and the rain descended, and the floods came,*

§ 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN (*continued*).

## Luke vi.

*the stream brake against that house,  
and could not shake it:*

<sup>1</sup> *because it had been well builded.*

<sup>49</sup> But he that heareth  
and doeth not,  
is like a man  
that built a house upon the earth  
*without a foundation;*  
*against which the stream brake,*  
*and straightway it fell in:*  
and the ruin of that house was great.

## Matt. vii.

*and the winds blew, and beat upon that house;*  
*and it fell not:*  
*for it was founded upon the rock.*

<sup>26</sup> And every one that heareth these words of mine,  
and doeth them not,  
*shall be likened unto a foolish man,*  
*which built his house upon the sand:*  
<sup>27</sup> And the rain descended, and the floods came,  
and the winds blew, and smote upon that house;  
and it fell:  
and great was the fall thereof.

## § 130. THE CENTURION'S SERVANT.

## Luke vii.

<sup>1</sup> *After he had ended all his sayings in the ears of the people,*  
he entered into Capernaum.

<sup>2</sup> And a certain centurion's

*servant, who was dear unto him,*  
*was sick and at the point of death.*

<sup>3</sup> And when he heard concerning Jesus, he sent unto him elders  
of the Jews, asking him that he would come and save his  
<sup>4</sup> servant. | And they, when they came to Jesus, besought him  
earnestly, saying, *He is worthy that thou shouldest do this*  
<sup>5</sup> *for him: | for he loveth our nation, and himself built us our*  
*synagogue.*

<sup>6</sup> And Jesus went with them.  
*And when he was now not far from the house,*  
*the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him,*  
*Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy*  
*that thou shouldest come under my roof:*

<sup>7</sup> *wherefore neither thought I myself worthy*  
*to come unto thee:*  
*but say the word,*  
*and my servant shall be healed.*

<sup>8</sup> For I also am a man set under authority,  
having under myself soldiers:  
and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth;  
and to another, Come, and he cometh;  
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

<sup>9</sup> And when Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him,  
and turned and said unto the multitude that followed him,  
I say unto you,  
I have not found so great faith,  
no, not in Israel.

<sup>10</sup> And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the  
servant whole.

## Matt. viii.

<sup>5</sup> And when he was entered into Capernaum,  
*there came unto him a centurion,*  
*beseeching him, and saying,*

<sup>6</sup> *Lord, my servant lieth in the house*  
*sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.*

<sup>7</sup> And he saith unto him,  
I will come and heal him.

<sup>8</sup> And the centurion answered and said,  
Lord, I am not worthy  
that thou shouldest come under my roof:

*but only say the word,*  
*and my servant shall be healed.*

<sup>9</sup> For I also am a man <sup>3</sup> under authority,  
having under myself soldiers:  
and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth;  
and to another, Come, and he cometh;  
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

<sup>10</sup> And when Jesus heard it, he marvelled,  
and said to them that followed,  
Verily I say unto you,  
I have not found so great faith,  
no, not in Israel.

<sup>13</sup> And Jesus said unto the centurion, *Go thy way;*  
*as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee.*  
And the servant was healed in that hour.

## § 131. THE WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN.

## Luke vii.

<sup>11</sup> And it came to pass <sup>2</sup> soon afterwards, that he went to  
a city called Nain; and his disciples went with him, and  
<sup>12</sup> a great multitude. | Now when he drew near to the gate of  
the city, behold, there was carried out one that was dead, the  
only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much  
<sup>13</sup> people of the city was with her. | And when the Lord saw  
her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep

<sup>1</sup> M. for it had been founded upon the rock.

<sup>2</sup> M. on the next day.

<sup>3</sup> M. add set.

§ 131. THE WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN (*continued*).

Luke vii.

<sup>14</sup> not. | *And he came nigh and touched the bier: and the bearers stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.* | *And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he gave him to his mother.* | *And fear took hold on all: and they glorified God, saying, A great prophet is arisen among us: and, God hath visited his people.* | *And this report went forth concerning him in the whole of Judæa, and all the region round about.*

## § 132. JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke vii.

<sup>18</sup> *And the disciples of John told him of all these things.*  
<sup>19</sup> *And John calling unto him two of his disciples sent them to the Lord, saying,*  
*Art thou he that cometh,*  
*or look we for another?*  
<sup>20</sup> *And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another?* | *In that hour he cured many of diseases and plagues and evil spirits; and on many that were blind he bestowed sight.*  
<sup>22</sup> *And he answered and said unto them,*  
*Go your way, and tell John*  
*what things ye have seen and heard;*  
*'the blind receive their sight,' the lame walk,*  
*the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,*  
*the dead are raised up,*  
*'the poor have good tidings preached to them.'*<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>23</sup> *And blessed is he, whosoever shall find none occasion of stumbling in me.*  
<sup>24</sup> *And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to say unto the multitudes concerning John,*  
*What went ye out into the wilderness to behold?*  
*a reed shaken with the wind?*  
<sup>25</sup> *But what went ye out to see?*  
*a man clothed in soft raiment?*  
*Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately,*  
*are in kings' courts.*  
<sup>26</sup> *But what went ye out to see? a prophet?*  
*Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.*  
<sup>27</sup> *This is he of whom it is written,*  
*'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,*  
*Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'*<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>28</sup> *I say unto you,*  
*Among them that are born of women*  
*there is none greater than John:*  
*yet he that is but little in the kingdom of God*  
*is greater than he.*  
<sup>29</sup> *And all the people when they heard, and the publicans,*  
<sup>30</sup> *justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.* | *But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves the counsel of God, being not baptized of him.*  
<sup>31</sup> *Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation,*  
*and to what are they like?*  
<sup>32</sup> *They are like unto children that sit in the marketplace,*  
*and call one to another; which say,*  
*We piped unto you, and ye did not dance;*  
*we wailed, and ye did not weep.*

Matt. xi.

<sup>2</sup> *Now when John heard in the prison the works of the Christ,*  
<sup>3</sup> *he sent by his disciples, and said unto him,*  
  
*Art thou he that cometh,*  
*or look we for another?*  
  
<sup>4</sup> *And Jesus answered and said unto them,*  
*Go your way and tell John*  
*the things which ye do hear and see:*  
<sup>5</sup> *'the blind receive their sight,' and the lame walk,*  
*the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,*  
*and the dead are raised up,*  
*and 'the poor have good tidings preached to them.'*<sup>a</sup>  
<sup>6</sup> *And blessed is he, whosoever shall find none occasion of stumbling in me.*  
  
<sup>7</sup> *And as these went their way,*  
*Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John*  
*What went ye out into the wilderness to behold?*  
*a reed shaken with the wind?*  
<sup>8</sup> *But what went ye out for to see?*  
*a man clothed in soft raiment?*  
*Behold, they that wear soft raiment*  
  
*are in kings' houses.*  
<sup>9</sup> *But wherefore went ye out? to see a prophet?*  
*Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.*  
<sup>10</sup> *This is he, of whom it is written,*  
*'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,*  
*Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'*<sup>b</sup>  
<sup>11</sup> *Verily I say unto you,*  
*Among them that are born of women*  
*there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist:*  
*yet he that is but little in the kingdom of heaven*  
*is greater than he.*  
  
<sup>16</sup> *But whereunto shall I liken this generation?*  
  
*It is like unto children sitting in the marketplaces,*  
*which call unto their fellows, and say,*  
<sup>17</sup> *We piped unto you, and ye did not dance;*  
*we wailed, and ye did not mourn.*

<sup>a</sup> Isa. lxi. 1.<sup>b</sup> Mal. iii. 1.<sup>c</sup> M. But what went ye out to see? a prophet?



§ 132. JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

Luke vii.

Matt. xi.

- <sup>33</sup> For John the Baptist is come eating no bread nor drinking wine;  
and ye say, He hath a devil.  
<sup>34</sup> The Son of man is come eating and drinking;  
and ye say,  
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,  
a friend of publicans and sinners!  
<sup>35</sup> And wisdom is justified of all her children.

- <sup>18</sup> For John came neither eating nor drinking,  
and they say, He hath a devil.  
<sup>19</sup> The Son of man came eating and drinking,  
and they say,  
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,  
a friend of publicans and sinners!  
And wisdom is justified by her <sup>a</sup> works.

## § 133. THE ANOINTING OF JESUS.

Luke vii, viii.

[Cf. § 74.]

- <sup>36</sup> And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. | And behold, a woman which was in the city, a sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting at meat in the Pharisee's house, she brought an alabaster cruse of ointment, | and standing behind at his feet, weeping, she began to wet his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. | Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were <sup>1</sup> a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him, that she is a sinner. | And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. | A certain lender had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, <sup>42</sup> and the other fifty. | When they had not wherewith to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them therefore will love <sup>43</sup> him most? | Simon answered and said, He, I suppose, to whom he forgave the most. And he said unto him, Thou <sup>44</sup> hast rightly judged. | And turning to the woman, he said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath wetted my feet with her tears, and wiped them with her hair. | <sup>45</sup> Thou gavest me no kiss: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. | My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but she hath anointed my feet with ointment. | <sup>47</sup> Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, <sup>48</sup> the same loveth little. | And he said unto her, Thy sins are <sup>49</sup> forgiven. | And they that sat at meat with him began to say <sup>50</sup> within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth sins? | And he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.  
viii. <sup>1</sup> And it came to pass soon afterwards, that he went about through cities and villages, preaching and bringing the good tidings of the kingdom of God, and with him the <sup>2</sup> twelve, | and certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary that was called Magdalene, <sup>3</sup> from whom seven devils had gone out, | and Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto them of their substance.

## § 134. THE INHOSPITABLE SAMARITANS.

Luke ix.

- <sup>51</sup> And it came to pass, when the days were well-nigh come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to <sup>52</sup> Jerusalem, | and sent messengers before his face: and they

<sup>1</sup> M. the prophet.<sup>2</sup> M. children.



§ 134. INHOSPITABLE SAMARITANS (*continued*).

Luke ix.

went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make  
 53 ready for him. | And they did not receive him, because his  
 54 face was as though he were going to Jerusalem. | And when  
 his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt  
 thou that we bid 'fire to come down from heaven, and consume  
 55, 56 them?' <sup>a 1</sup> | But he turned, and rebuked them. <sup>2</sup> | And they  
 went to another village.

## § 135. INSTANCES OF DISCIPLESHIP.

Luke ix.

57 And as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him,  
 I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.  
 58 And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes,  
 and the birds of the heaven have nests;  
 but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.  
 59 And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said,  
 Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.  
 60 But he said unto him,  
 Leave the dead to bury their own dead;  
 but go thou and publish abroad the kingdom of God.  
 61 And another also said, I will follow thee, Lord; but first  
 62 suffer me to bid farewell to them that are at my house. | But  
 Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the  
 plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

Matt. viii.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him,  
 he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.  
 19 And there came a scribe, and said unto him,  
 Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.  
 20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes,  
 and the birds of the heaven have nests;  
 but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.  
 21 And another of the disciples said unto him, }  
 Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. }  
 22 But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me;  
 and leave the dead to bury their own dead.

## § 136. WOE TO UNBELIEVING CITIES.

Luke x.

12 I say unto you,  
 It shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom,  
 than for that city.  
 13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin!  
 woe unto thee, Bethsaida!  
 for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon,  
 which were done in you,  
 they would have repented long ago,  
 sitting in sackcloth and ashes.  
 14 Howbeit  
 it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon  
 in the judgement, than for you.  
 15 And thou, Capernaum,  
 shalt thou be exalted unto heaven?  
 thou shalt be brought down unto Hades.

Matt. xi.

24 Howbeit I say unto you,  
 that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom  
 in the day of judgement, than for thee.  
 21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin!  
 woe unto thee, Bethsaida!  
 for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon  
 which were done in you,  
 they would have repented long ago  
 in sackcloth and ashes.  
 22 Howbeit I say unto you,  
 it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon  
 in the day of judgement, than for you  
 23 And thou, Capernaum,  
 shalt thou be exalted unto heaven?  
 thou shalt go down unto Hades:  
 for if the mighty works had been done in Sodom  
 which were done in thee,  
 it would have remained until this day.

Matt. x.

16 He that heareth you heareth me;  
 and he that rejecteth you rejecteth me;  
 and he that rejecteth me  
 rejecteth him that sent me.

40 He that receiveth you receiveth me,  
 and he that receiveth me  
 receiveth him that sent me.

<sup>a</sup> 2 Kings i. 10.  
<sup>1</sup> M. add even as Elijah did.  
<sup>2</sup> M. add and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. [For the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives, but to save them.]

## § 137. THE RETURN OF THE SEVENTY.

## Luke x.

- <sup>17</sup> *And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the*  
<sup>18</sup> *devils are subject unto us in thy name. | And he said unto*  
*them, I beheld Satan fallen as lightning from heaven. |*  
<sup>19</sup> *Behold, I have given you authority to 'tread upon serpents'<sup>a</sup>*  
*and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and*  
<sup>20</sup> *nothing shall in any wise hurt you. | Howbeit in this rejoice*  
*not, that the spirits are subject unto you: but rejoice that*  
*your names are written in heaven.*

## § 138. THREE MEDITATIONS.

## Luke x.

- A. <sup>21</sup> *In that same hour he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said,*  
*I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,*  
*that thou didst hide these things*  
*from the wise and understanding,*  
*and didst reveal them unto babes:*  
*yea, Father; for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.*
- B. <sup>22</sup> *All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:*  
*and no one knoweth who the Son is, save the Father;*  
*and who the Father is, save the Son,*  
*and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.*

## Matt. xi.

- <sup>25</sup> *At that season Jesus answered and said,*  
*I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,*  
*that thou didst hide these things*  
*from the wise and understanding,*  
*and didst reveal them unto babes:*  
<sup>26</sup> *yea, Father, for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.*
- <sup>27</sup> *All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:*  
*and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father;*  
*neither doth any know the Father, save the Son,*  
*and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.*

## Matt. xiii.

- C. <sup>23</sup> *And turning to the disciples, he said privately,*  
*Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see:*
- <sup>24</sup> *for I say unto you,*  
*that many prophets and kings*  
*desired to see the things which ye see,*  
*and saw them not;*  
*and to hear the things which ye hear,*  
*and heard them not.*

- <sup>16</sup> *But blessed are your eyes, for they see;*  
*and your ears, for they hear.*
- <sup>17</sup> *For verily I say unto you,*  
*that many prophets and righteous men*  
*desired to see the things which ye see,*  
*and saw them not;*  
*and to hear the things which ye hear,*  
*and heard them not.*

## § 139. THE PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN.

## Luke x.

- <sup>29</sup> *But he, desiring to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And*  
<sup>30</sup> *who is my neighbour? | Jesus made answer and said,*  
*A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho;*  
*and he fell among robbers, which both stripped him and beat*  
<sup>31</sup> *him, and departed, leaving him half dead. | And by chance*  
*a certain priest was going down that way: and when he saw*  
<sup>32</sup> *him, he passed by on the other side. | And in like manner*  
*a Levite also, when he came to the place, and saw him,*  
<sup>33</sup> *passed by on the other side. | But a certain Samaritan, as*  
*he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he*  
<sup>34</sup> *was moved with compassion, | and came to him, and bound*  
*up his wounds, pouring on them oil and wine; and he set*  
<sup>35</sup> *him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took*  
*care of him. | And on the morrow he took out two pence, and*  
*gave them to the host, and said, Take care of him; and*  
<sup>36</sup> *whatsoever thou spendest more, I, when I come back again,*  
*will repay thee. | Which of these three, thinkest thou, proved*  
<sup>37</sup> *neighbour unto him that fell among the robbers? | And he*  
*said, He that shewed mercy on him. And Jesus said unto*  
*him, Go, and do thou likewise.*

<sup>a</sup> Ps. xci. 13.

## § 140. MARTHA AND MARY.

Luke x.

<sup>38</sup> Now as they went on their way, he entered into a certain village : and a certain woman named Martha received him  
<sup>39</sup> into her house. | And she had a sister called Mary, which  
<sup>40</sup> also sat at the Lord's feet, and heard his word. | But Martha was cumbered about much serving ; and she came up to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister did leave  
<sup>41</sup> me to serve alone ? bid her therefore that she help me. | But the Lord answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou  
<sup>42</sup> art <sup>1</sup> anxious and troubled about many things : | <sup>2</sup> but one thing is needful : for Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

## § 141. THE LORD'S PRAYER.

Luke xi.

Matt. vi

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place, that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord,  
<sup>2</sup> teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples. | And he said unto them,  
 When ye pray, say,  
<sup>3</sup> Father,  
 Hallowed be thy name.  
 Thy kingdom come.<sup>4</sup>  
<sup>3</sup> Give us day by day our daily bread.  
<sup>4</sup> And forgive us our sins ;  
 for we ourselves also forgive every one that is indebted to us.  
 And bring us not into temptation.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>9</sup> After this manner therefore pray ye :  
 Our Father which art in heaven,  
<sup>10</sup> Hallowed be thy name.  
 Thy kingdom come.  
 Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.  
<sup>11</sup> Give us this day our daily bread.  
<sup>12</sup> And forgive us our debts,  
 as we also have forgiven our debtors.  
<sup>13</sup> And bring us not into temptation,  
 but deliver us from <sup>7</sup> the evil one.<sup>8</sup>

## § 142. THE IMPORTUNATE FRIEND.

Luke xi.

<sup>5</sup> And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend,  
 and shall go unto him at midnight, and say to him, Friend,  
<sup>6</sup> lend me three loaves ; | for a friend of mine is come to me  
<sup>7</sup> from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him ; | and he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not : the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed ; I  
<sup>8</sup> cannot rise and give thee ? | I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will arise and give him as many as he needeth.

## § 143. PERSEVERANCE IN PRAYER.

Luke xi.

Matt. vii.

<sup>9</sup> And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you ;  
 seek, and ye shall find ;  
 knock, and it shall be opened unto you.  
<sup>0</sup> For every one that asketh receiveth ;  
 and he that seeketh findeth ;  
 and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.  
<sup>1</sup> And of which of you that is a father shall his son ask  
<sup>a</sup> a loaf, and he give him a stone ?  
 or a fish, and he for a fish give him a serpent ?  
<sup>2</sup> Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion ?  
<sup>3</sup> If ye then, being evil,  
 know how to give good gifts unto your children,  
 how much more shall your heavenly Father  
 give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him ?

<sup>7</sup> Ask, and it shall be given you ;  
 seek, and ye shall find ;  
 knock, and it shall be opened unto you :  
<sup>8</sup> for every one that asketh receiveth ;  
 and he that seeketh findeth ;  
 and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.  
<sup>9</sup> Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him  
 for a loaf, will give him a stone ;  
<sup>10</sup> or if he ask for a fish, will he give him a serpent ?  
<sup>11</sup> If ye then, being evil,  
 know how to give good gifts unto your children,  
 how much more shall your Father which is in heaven  
 give good things to them that ask him ?

<sup>1</sup> M. troubled : Mary hath chosen, &c.    <sup>2</sup> M. but few things are needful, or one.    <sup>3</sup> M. Our Father, which art in heaven.  
<sup>4</sup> M. add Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.    <sup>5</sup> M. add but deliver us from the evil one (or the evil).  
<sup>6</sup> M. omit a loaf, and he give him a stone ? or.    <sup>7</sup> M. or evil.  
<sup>8</sup> M. add For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.



## § 144. 'THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT.'

Luke xi.

- <sup>24</sup> The unclean spirit  
when he is gone out of the man,  
passeth through waterless places, seeking rest;  
and finding none, he saith,  
I will turn back unto my house whence I came out.  
<sup>25</sup> And when he is come,  
he findeth it swept and garnished.  
<sup>26</sup> Then goeth he, and taketh to him  
seven other spirits more evil than himself;  
and they enter in and dwell there:  
and the last state of that man  
becometh worse than the first.

Matt. xii.

- <sup>43</sup> But the unclean spirit,  
when he is gone out of the man,  
passeth through waterless places, seeking rest,  
<sup>44</sup> and findeth it not. Then he saith,  
I will return into my house whence I came out;  
and when he is come,  
he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.  
<sup>45</sup> Then goeth he, and taketh with himself  
seven other spirits more evil than himself,  
and they enter in and dwell there:  
and the last state of that man  
becometh worse than the first.  
*Even so shall it be also unto this evil generation.*

## § 145. TRUE BLESSEDNESS.

Luke xi.

- <sup>27</sup> And it came to pass, as he said these things, a certain  
woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said  
unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the breasts  
<sup>28</sup> which thou didst suck. | But he said, Yea rather, blessed are  
they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

[cf. § 22.]

## § 146. 'THIS GENERATION.'

Luke xi.

- <sup>31</sup> The queen of the south shall rise up  
in the judgement with the men of this generation,  
and shall condemn them:  
for she came from the ends of the earth  
to hear the wisdom of Solomon;  
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.  
<sup>32</sup> The men of Nineveh shall stand up  
in the judgement with this generation,  
and shall condemn it:  
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah;  
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

Matt. xii.

- <sup>42</sup> The queen of the south shall rise up  
in the judgement with this generation,  
and shall condemn it:  
for she came from the ends of the earth  
to hear the wisdom of Solomon;  
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.  
<sup>41</sup> The men of Nineveh shall stand up  
in the judgement with this generation,  
and shall condemn it:  
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah;  
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

## § 147. SAYINGS ABOUT A LAMP.

Luke xi.

- <sup>34</sup> The lamp of thy body is thine eye:  
when thine eye is single,  
thy whole body also is full of light;  
but when it is evil,  
thy body also is full of darkness.  
<sup>35</sup> Look therefore whether the light that is in thee be not  
darkness.  
<sup>36</sup> If therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part  
dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with  
its bright shining doth give thee light.

Matt. vi.

- <sup>22</sup> The lamp of the body is the eye:  
if therefore thine eye be single,  
thy whole body shall be full of light.  
<sup>23</sup> But if thine eye be evil,  
thy whole body shall be full of darkness.  
If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how  
great is the darkness!

## § 148. WOE TO PHARISEES AND LAWYERS.

Luke xi.

- A.  
<sup>37</sup> Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to dine with him:  
<sup>38</sup> and he went in, and sat down to meat. | And when the  
Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed  
<sup>39</sup> before dinner. | And the Lord said unto him,  
Now do ye Pharisees  
cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter;  
but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness.  
<sup>40</sup> Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the  
inside also?

Matt. xxiii.

- <sup>25</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!  
for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter,  
but within they are full from extortion and excess.  
<sup>26</sup> Thou blind Pharisee,



§ 148. WOE TO PHARISEES AND LAWYERS (*continued*).

Luke xi.

- <sup>41</sup> *Howbeit give for alms those things which are within ; and behold, all things are clean unto you.*
- <sup>42</sup> But woe unto you Pharisees !  
for ye tithe mint and rue and every herb,  
and pass over  
judgement and the love of God :  
but these ought ye to have done,  
and not to leave the other undone.
- <sup>43</sup> Woe unto you Pharisees !  
for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues,  
and the salutations in the marketplaces. [cf. xx. 46, § 70.]
- <sup>44</sup> Woe unto you !  
for ye are as the tombs which appear not,  
and the men that walk over them know it not.
- <sup>45</sup> And one of the lawyers answering saith unto him, Master,  
<sup>46</sup> in saying this thou reproachest us also. | And he said, Woe  
unto you lawyers also ! for ye lade men with burdens grievous  
to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one  
of your fingers.
- <sup>47</sup> Woe unto you !  
for ye build the tombs of the prophets,  
and your fathers killed them.
- <sup>48</sup> So ye are witnesses and consent unto the works of your fathers :  
for they killed them, and ye build their tombs.
- <sup>49</sup> Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them  
prophets  
and apostles ;  
and some of them they shall kill  
and persecute ;  
<sup>50</sup> that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from  
the foundation of the world,  
may be required of this generation ;  
<sup>51</sup> from the blood of Abel  
unto the blood of Zachariah,  
who perished between the altar and the sanctuary :  
yea, I say unto you,  
it shall be required of this generation.
- <sup>52</sup> Woe unto you lawyers !  
for ye took away the key of knowledge :  
ye entered not in yourselves,  
and them that were entering in ye hindered.
- <sup>53</sup> And when he was come out from thence, the scribes and the  
Pharisees began to press upon him vehemently, and to provoke  
<sup>54</sup> him to speak of many things ; | laying wait for him, to catch  
something out of his mouth.

THOMPSON.

Matt. xxiii.

- cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter,  
that the outside thereof may become clean also.*
- <sup>23</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !  
for ye tithe mint and anise and cummin,  
and have left undone the weightier matters of the law,  
judgement, and mercy, and faith :  
but these ye ought to have done,  
and not to have left the other undone.
- <sup>6</sup> . . . and love the chief place at feasts,  
and the chief seats in the synagogues, }  
<sup>7</sup> and the salutations in the marketplaces, }
- <sup>27</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !  
for ye are like unto whited sepulchres,  
  
*which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of*  
<sup>28</sup> *dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. | Even so ye also*  
*outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are*  
*full of hypocrisy and iniquity.*
- <sup>29</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !  
for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, }  
and garnish the tombs of the righteous, and say, }  
<sup>30</sup> *If we had been in the days of our fathers,*  
*we should not have been partakers with them*  
*in the blood of the prophets.*  
<sup>31</sup> Wherefore ye witness to yourselves,  
that ye are sons of them that slew the prophets.  
<sup>32</sup> Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.  
<sup>33</sup> Ye serpents, ye offspring of vipers,  
how shall ye escape the judgement of hell ?  
<sup>34</sup> Therefore, behold, I send unto you prophets,  
  
and wise men, and scribes :  
some of them shall ye kill and crucify ;  
and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues,  
and persecute from city to city :  
<sup>35</sup> that upon you may come  
all the righteous blood shed on the earth, }  
from the blood of Abel the righteous  
unto the blood of Zachariah the son of Barachiah,  
whom ye slew between the sanctuary and the altar.  
<sup>36</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
all these things shall come upon this generation.
- <sup>13</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !  
because ye shut the kingdom of heaven against men :  
for ye enter not in yourselves,  
neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter.

L.

## § 149. VARIOUS SAYINGS.

Luke xii.

Matt. x.

A.

<sup>1</sup> *In the mean time, when the many thousands of the multitude were gathered together, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.*

B.

<sup>2</sup> *But there is nothing covered up, that shall not be revealed : and hid, that shall not be known.*

<sup>3</sup> *Wherefore whatsoever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light ; and what ye have spoken in the ear in the inner chambers ; shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.*

C.

<sup>4</sup> *And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them which kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do.*

<sup>5</sup> *But I will warn you whom ye shall fear : Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell ; yea, I say unto you, fear him.*

D.

<sup>6</sup> *Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings ? and not one of them is forgotten in the sight of God.*

<sup>7</sup> *But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not : ye are of more value than many sparrows.*

E.

<sup>8</sup> *And I say unto you, Every one who shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God :*

<sup>9</sup> *but he that denieth me in the presence of men, shall be denied in the presence of the angels of God.*

<sup>27</sup> *What I tell you in the darkness, speak ye in the light : and what ye hear in the ear, proclaim upon the housetops.*

<sup>28</sup> *And be not afraid of them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul :*

*but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.*

<sup>29</sup> *Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing ? and not one of them shall fall on the ground without your Father :*

<sup>30</sup> *but the very hairs of your head are all numbered.*

<sup>31</sup> *Fear not therefore ; ye are of more value than many sparrows.*

<sup>32</sup> *Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father which is in heaven.*

<sup>33</sup> *But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.*

## § 150. THE PARABLE OF THE RICH FOOL.

Luke xii.

<sup>13</sup> *And one out of the multitude said unto him, Master, bid my brother divide the inheritance with me. | But he said unto*  
<sup>14</sup> *him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you ? | And*  
<sup>15</sup> *he said unto them, Take heed, and keep yourselves from all covetousness : for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance*  
<sup>16</sup> *of the things which he possesseth. | And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought*  
<sup>17</sup> *forth plentifully : | and he reasoned within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have not where to bestow my*  
<sup>18</sup> *fruits ? | And he said, This will I do : I will pull down my barns, and build greater ; and there will I bestow all my*  
<sup>19</sup> *corn and my goods. | And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years ; take thine ease,*  
<sup>20</sup> *eat, drink, be merry. | But God said unto him, Thou foolish one, this night is thy soul required of thee ; and the things*  
<sup>21</sup> *which thou hast prepared, whose shall they be ? | So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.*

## § 151. FAITH IN PROVIDENCE.

Luke xii.

Matt. vi.

<sup>22</sup> *And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat ; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.*

<sup>25</sup> *Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink ; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.*

§ 151. FAITH IN PROVIDENCE (*continued*).

Luke xii.

- <sup>23</sup> *For the life is more than the food,  
and the body than the raiment.*  
<sup>24</sup> *Consider the ravens,  
that they sow not, neither reap;  
which have no store-chamber nor barn;  
and God feedeth them:  
of how much more value are ye than the birds!*  
<sup>25</sup> *And which of you by being anxious can  
add a cubit unto his stature?*  
<sup>26</sup> *If then ye are not able to do even that which is least,  
why are ye anxious concerning the rest?*  
<sup>27</sup> *Consider the lilies, how they grow:  
they toil not, neither do they spin;  
yet I say unto you,  
Even Solomon in all his glory  
was not arrayed like one of these.*  
<sup>28</sup> *But if God doth so clothe the grass in the field,  
which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven;  
how much more shall he clothe you, O ye of little faith?*  
<sup>29</sup> *And seek not ye  
what ye shall eat, and what ye shall drink,  
neither be ye of doubtful mind.*  
<sup>30</sup> *For all these things do the nations of the world seek after:  
but your Father knoweth  
that ye have need of these things.*  
<sup>31</sup> *Howbeit seek ye <sup>1</sup> his kingdom,  
and these things shall be added unto you.*

Matt. vi.

- Is not the life more than the food,  
and the body than the raiment?*  
<sup>26</sup> *Behold the birds of the heaven,  
that they sow not, neither do they reap,  
nor gather into barns;  
and your heavenly Father feedeth them.  
Are not ye of much more value than they?*  
<sup>27</sup> *And which of you by being anxious can  
add one cubit unto his stature?*  
<sup>28</sup> *And why are ye anxious concerning raiment?  
Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow;  
they toil not, neither do they spin:  
yet I say unto you, that  
even Solomon in all his glory  
was not arrayed like one of these.*  
<sup>30</sup> *But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field,  
which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven,  
shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?*  
<sup>31</sup> *Be not therefore anxious, saying,  
What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink?  
or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?*  
<sup>32</sup> *For after all these things do the Gentiles seek;  
for your heavenly Father knoweth  
that ye have need of all these things.*  
<sup>33</sup> *But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness;  
and all these things shall be added unto you.*

## § 152. 'TREASURE IN HEAVEN.'

Luke xii.

- <sup>32</sup> *Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to  
give you the kingdom. | Sell that ye have, and give alms; make  
for yourselves purses which wax not old,  
a treasure in the heavens that faileth not,  
where no thief draweth near,  
neither moth destroyeth.*  
<sup>34</sup> *For where your treasure is,  
there will your heart be also.*

Matt. vi.

- <sup>19</sup> *Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where  
moth and rust doth consume, and where thieves break through  
and steal:*  
<sup>20</sup> *but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, }  
where neither moth nor rust doth consume, }  
and where thieves do not break through nor steal: }*  
<sup>21</sup> *for where thy treasure is,  
there will thy heart be also.*

## § 153. WATCHFULNESS.

Luke xii.

- <sup>35</sup> *Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning;  
and be ye yourselves like unto men looking for their lord,  
when he shall return from the marriage feast; that, when  
he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open unto  
him. | Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he  
cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he  
shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and  
shall come and serve them. | And if he shall come in the  
second watch, and if in the third, and find them so, blessed  
are those servants.*

[Cf. Matt. xxv. 1-13, § 113.]

## § 154. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING.

Luke xii.

- <sup>39</sup> *But know this,  
that if the master of the house had known  
in what hour the thief was coming,  
he would have watched,*

Matt. xxiv.

- <sup>43</sup> *But know this,  
that if the master of the house had known  
in what watch the thief was coming,  
he would have watched,*

<sup>1</sup> M. the kingdom of God.



§ 154. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING (*continued*).

Luke xii.

- and not have *left*  
his house to be broken through.
- <sup>40</sup> Be ye also ready:  
for in an hour that ye think not  
the Son of man cometh.
- <sup>41</sup> And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or  
<sup>42</sup> even unto all? | And the Lord said,  
Who then is the faithful and wise *steward*,  
whom his lord shall set over his household,  
to give them their portion of food in due season?
- <sup>43</sup> Blessed is that servant,  
whom his lord when he cometh  
shall find so doing.
- <sup>44</sup> Of a truth I say unto you,  
that he will set him over all that he hath.
- <sup>45</sup> But if that servant shall say in his heart,  
My lord *delayeth his coming*;  
and shall begin to beat the *menservants* and the *maid-*  
*servants*,  
and to eat and drink, and to be drunken;
- <sup>46</sup> the lord of that servant shall come  
in a day when he expecteth not,  
and in an hour when he knoweth not,  
and shall cut him asunder,  
and appoint his portion with the *unfaithful*.
- <sup>47</sup> And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and made not  
*ready*, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with  
<sup>48</sup> many stripes; | but he that knew not, and did things worthy  
of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. And to whomso-  
ever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to  
whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

Matt. xxiv.

- and would not have *suffered*  
his house to be broken through.
- <sup>44</sup> Therefore be ye also ready:  
for in an hour that ye think not  
the Son of man cometh.
- <sup>45</sup> Who then is the faithful and wise *servant*,  
whom his lord hath set over his household,  
to give them their food in due season?
- <sup>46</sup> Blessed is that servant,  
whom his lord when he cometh  
shall find so doing.
- <sup>47</sup> Verily I say unto you,  
that he will set him over all that he hath.
- <sup>48</sup> But if that *evil* servant shall say in his heart,  
My lord *tarrieth*;
- <sup>49</sup> and shall begin to beat his *fellow-servants*,  
and shall eat and drink *with* the drunken;
- <sup>50</sup> the lord of that servant shall come  
in a day when he expecteth not,  
and in an hour when he knoweth not,
- <sup>51</sup> and shall cut him asunder,  
and appoint his portion with the *hypocrites*:  
*there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

## § 155. RELIGIOUS DIVISIONS.

Luke xii.

- <sup>49</sup> I came to cast fire upon the earth; and what will I, if it is  
<sup>50</sup> already kindled? | But I have a baptism to be baptized  
with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!
- <sup>51</sup> Think ye that I am come  
to give peace in the earth?  
I tell you, Nay; but rather *division*:  
<sup>52</sup> for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided,  
three against two, and two against three.
- <sup>53</sup> They shall be divided, father against son,  
and 'son against father';  
mother against daughter,  
and 'daughter against her mother';  
mother in law against her daughter in law,  
and 'daughter in law against her mother in law'.<sup>a</sup>

Matt. x.

- <sup>34</sup> Think not that I came  
to send peace on the earth:  
I came not to send peace, but a sword.
- <sup>35</sup> For I came to set a man at variance  
'against his father,  
and the daughter against her mother,  
and the daughter in law against her mother in law:  
<sup>36</sup> and a man's foes shall be they of his own household.'<sup>a</sup>

## § 156. SIGNS OF THE TIMES.

Luke xii.

- <sup>54</sup> And he said to the multitudes also,  
When ye see a cloud rising in the west,

Matt. xvi.

- <sup>1</sup> And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him  
asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.
- <sup>2</sup> But he answered and said unto them,  
When it is evening,

<sup>a</sup> Mic. vii. 6.



§ 156. SIGNS OF THE TIMES (*continued*).

Luke xii.

Matt. xvi.

straightway ye say,  
There cometh a shower;  
and so it cometh to pass.

<sup>55</sup> And when ye see a south wind blowing,  
ye say, There will be a scorching heat;  
and it cometh to pass.

<sup>56</sup> Ye hypocrites, ye know how to interpret  
the face of the earth and the heaven;  
but how is it that ye know not  
how to interpret this time?

ye say,  
It will be fair weather:  
for the heaven is red.  
<sup>3</sup> And in the morning,  
It will be foul weather to-day:  
for the heaven is red and lowering.  
Ye know how to discern  
the face of the heaven;  
but ye cannot  
discern the signs of the times.

## § 157. RECONCILIATION.

Luke xii.

Matt. v.

<sup>57</sup> And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?  
<sup>58</sup> For as thou art going with thine adversary before the  
magistrate,

on the way give diligence to be quit of him;  
lest haply he hale thee unto the judge,  
and the judge shall deliver thee to the officer,  
and the officer shall cast thee into prison.

<sup>59</sup> I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence,  
till thou have paid the very last mite.

<sup>25</sup> Agree with thine adversary quickly, }  
whiles thou art with him in the way; }  
lest haply the adversary deliver thee to the judge,  
and the judge deliver thee to the officer,  
and thou be cast into prison.  
<sup>26</sup> Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out  
thence,  
till thou have paid the last farthing.

## § 158. THE GALILAEANS, AND THE TOWER IN SILOAM.

Luke xiii.

<sup>1</sup> Now there were some present at that very season which told  
him of the Galilaeans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with  
<sup>2</sup> their sacrifices. | And he answered and said unto them,  
Think ye that these Galilaeans were sinners above all the  
<sup>3</sup> Galilaeans, because they have suffered these things? | I tell  
you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all in like manner  
<sup>4</sup> perish. | Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam  
fell, and killed them, think ye that they were offenders above  
<sup>5</sup> all the men that dwell in Jerusalem? | I tell you, Nay: but,  
except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

## § 159. THE PARABLE OF THE FIG TREE.

Luke xiii.

[Cf. § 63.]

<sup>6</sup> And he spake this parable; A certain man had a fig tree  
planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon,  
<sup>7</sup> and found none. | And he said unto the vine-dresser, Behold,  
these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and  
find none: cut it down; why doth it also cumber the ground? |  
<sup>8</sup> And he answering saith unto him, Lord, let it alone this  
<sup>9</sup> year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: | and if it  
bear fruit thenceforth, well; but if not, thou shalt cut it  
down.

## § 160. A WOMAN WITH A SPIRIT OF INFIRMITY.

Luke xiii.

<sup>10</sup> And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath  
<sup>11</sup> day. | And behold, a woman which had a spirit of infirmity  
eighteen years; and she was bowed together, and could in no  
<sup>12</sup> wise lift herself up. | And when Jesus saw her, he called her,  
and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine in-  
<sup>13</sup> firmity. | And he laid his hands upon her: and immediately

§ 160. A WOMAN WITH A SPIRIT OF INFIRMITY (*continued*).

Luke xiii.

- <sup>14</sup> *she was made straight, and glorified God. | And the ruler of the synagogue, being moved with indignation because Jesus had healed on the sabbath, answered and said to the multitude, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the day of the sabbath.*  
<sup>15</sup> *But the Lord answered him, and said, Ye hypocrites, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? | And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, lo, these eighteen years, to have been loosed from this*  
<sup>17</sup> *bond on the day of the sabbath? | And as he said these things, all his adversaries were put to shame: and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.*

## § 161. A SAYING ABOUT LEAVEN.

Luke xiii.

- <sup>20</sup> *And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken*  
<sup>21</sup> *the kingdom of God? It is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till it was all leavened.*

Matt. xiii.

- <sup>33</sup> *Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till it was all leavened.*

## § 162. 'THE NARROW DOOR.'

Luke xiii.

- <sup>22</sup> *And he went on his way through cities and villages, teaching,*  
<sup>23</sup> *and journeying on unto Jerusalem. | And one said unto him, Lord, are they few that be saved? And he said unto them,*  
<sup>24</sup> *Strive to enter in by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and shall not be able.*  
<sup>25</sup> *When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know not whence ye are;*  
<sup>26</sup> *then shall ye begin to say, We did eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach in our streets;*  
<sup>27</sup> *and he shall say, I tell you, I know not whence ye are; 'depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.'*<sup>b</sup>

Matt. vii.

- <sup>13</sup> *Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many be they that enter in thereby.*  
<sup>22</sup> *Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not 'prophesy by thy name',<sup>a</sup> and by thy name cast out devils, and by thy name do many mighty works?*  
<sup>23</sup> *And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: 'depart from me, ye that work iniquity.'*<sup>b</sup>

Matt. viii.

- <sup>28</sup> *There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without.*  
<sup>29</sup> *And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.*  
<sup>30</sup> *And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.*  
<sup>12b</sup> *... there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.*  
<sup>11b</sup> *... with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven:*  
<sup>12a</sup> *but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: ...*  
<sup>11a</sup> *And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down ... [<sup>11b</sup> in the kingdom of heaven: ...]*

<sup>a</sup> Jer. xiv. 14.<sup>b</sup> Ps. vi. 8.

## § 163. CHRIST AND HEROD.

Luke xiii.

<sup>31</sup> In that very hour there came certain Pharisees, saying to him, Get thee out, and go hence: for Herod would fain kill thee. | And he said unto them, Go and say to that fox, Behold, I cast out devils and perform cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I am perfected. | Howbeit I must go on my way to-day and to-morrow and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

## § 164. 'O JERUSALEM, JERUSALEM.'

Luke xiii.

Matt. xxiii.

<sup>34</sup> O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killeth the prophets, and stoneth them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her own brood under her wings, and ye would not! <sup>35</sup> Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate:'<sup>a</sup> and I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until ye shall say, 'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.'<sup>b</sup>

<sup>37</sup> O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killeth the prophets, and stoneth them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! <sup>38</sup> Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate.'<sup>a</sup> <sup>39</sup> For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, 'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.'<sup>b</sup>

## § 165. A MAN WITH DROPSY.

Luke xiv.

<sup>1</sup> And it came to pass, when he went into the house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees on a sabbath to eat bread, that <sup>2</sup> they were watching him. | And behold, there was before him <sup>3</sup> a certain man which had the dropsy. | And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to <sup>4</sup> heal on the sabbath, or not? | But they held their peace. And <sup>5</sup> he took him, and healed him, and let him go. | And he said unto them, Which of you shall have <sup>1</sup> an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a sabbath <sup>6</sup> day? | And they could not answer again unto these things.

## § 166. HUMILITY AND HOSPITALITY.

Luke xiv.

<sup>7</sup> And he spake a parable unto those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief seats; saying unto <sup>8</sup> them, | When thou art bidden of any man to a marriage feast, sit not down in the chief seat; lest haply a more <sup>9</sup> honourable man than thou be bidden of him, | and he that bade thee and him shall come and say to thee, Give this man place; and then thou shalt begin with shame to take the <sup>10</sup> lowest place. | But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest place; that when he that hath bidden thee cometh, he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have glory in the presence of all that sit at meat with thee. | <sup>11</sup> For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. <sup>12</sup> And he said to him also that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor rich neighbours; lest haply they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee. | <sup>13</sup> But when thou makest a feast, bid the poor, the maimed, the <sup>14</sup> lame, the blind: | and thou shalt be blessed; because they have not wherewith to recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed in the resurrection of the just.

<sup>a</sup> Jer. xxii. 5.<sup>b</sup> Ps. cxviii. 26.<sup>1</sup> M. a son.



## § 167. THE PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE FEAST.

Luke xiv.

Matt. xxii.

<sup>15</sup> And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.

<sup>16</sup> But he said unto him,

A certain man

made a great supper; and he bade many:

<sup>17</sup> and he sent forth his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready.

<sup>18</sup> And they all with one consent began to make excuse.

The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. | And

another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. | And another

said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. |

<sup>21</sup> And the servant came, and told his lord these things.

Then the master of the house being angry

said to his servant,

Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. |

<sup>22</sup> And the servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is

<sup>23</sup> done, and yet there is room. | And the lord said unto the servant,

Go out into the highways and hedges, and constrain them to come in,

that my house may be filled.

<sup>24</sup> For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

<sup>1</sup> And Jesus answered and spake again in parables unto them, saying,

<sup>2</sup> The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a certain king, which made a marriage feast for his son,

<sup>3</sup> and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the marriage feast.

and they would not come.

<sup>4</sup> Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them that are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to

<sup>5</sup> the marriage feast. | But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his own farm, another to his merchandise: |

<sup>6</sup> and the rest laid hold on his servants, and entreated them shamefully, and killed them.

<sup>7</sup> But the king was wroth; and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned their city.

<sup>8</sup> Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not worthy.

<sup>9</sup> Go ye therefore unto the partings of the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage feast.

<sup>10</sup> And those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was filled with guests.

<sup>11</sup> But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw

<sup>12</sup> there a man which had not on a wedding-garment: | and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having

<sup>13</sup> a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. | Then the king said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him

<sup>14</sup> out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. | For many are called, but few chosen.

## § 168. DISCIPLESHIP.

Luke xiv.

Matt. x.

<sup>25</sup> Now there went with him great multitudes: and he turned, and said unto them,

<sup>26</sup> If any man cometh unto me, and hateth not his own father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

<sup>27</sup> Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

<sup>37</sup> He that loveth father or mother more than me }  
is not worthy of me;  
and he that loveth son or daughter more than me  
is not worthy of me.



## § 169. COUNTING THE COST.

Luke xiv.

<sup>28</sup> For which of you, desiring to build a tower, doth not first sit down and count the cost, whether he have wherewith to  
<sup>29</sup> complete it? | Lest haply, when he hath laid a foundation, and is not able to finish, all that behold begin to mock him,  
<sup>30</sup> saying, | This man began to build, and was not able to  
<sup>31</sup> finish. | Or what king, as he goeth to encounter another king in war, will not sit down first and take counsel whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him  
<sup>32</sup> with twenty thousand? | Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and asketh conditions  
<sup>33</sup> of peace. | So therefore whosoever he be of you that renounceth not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

## § 170. THE LOST SHEEP.

Luke xv.

Matt. xviii.

<sup>1</sup> Now all the publicans and sinners were drawing near unto  
<sup>2</sup> him for to hear him. | And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.  
<sup>3</sup> And he spake unto them this parable, saying,  
<sup>4</sup> What man of you, having a hundred sheep,  
 and having lost one of them,  
 doth not leave the ninety and nine  
 in the wilderness,  
 and go after that which is lost, until he find it?  
<sup>5</sup> And when he hath found it,  
 he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing.  
<sup>6</sup> And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends  
 and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me, for  
<sup>7</sup> I have found my sheep which was lost. | I say unto you, that  
 even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that  
 repenteth,  
 more than over ninety and nine righteous persons,  
 which need no repentance.

<sup>12</sup> How think ye?  
 if any man have a hundred sheep,  
 and one of them be gone astray,  
 doth he not leave the ninety and nine,  
 and go unto the mountains,  
 and seek that which goeth astray?  
<sup>13</sup> And if so be that he find it,  
 verily I say unto you,  
 he rejoiceth over it

more than over the ninety and nine  
 which have not gone astray.

## § 171. THE LOST COIN.

Luke xv.

<sup>6</sup> Or what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one  
 piece, doth not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek  
<sup>9</sup> diligently until she find it? | And when she hath found it,  
 she calleth together her friends and neighbours, saying,  
 Rejoice with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost. |  
<sup>10</sup> Even so, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the  
 angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

## § 172. THE PARABLE OF THE PRODIGAL SON.

Luke xv.

<sup>11, 12</sup> And he said, A certain man had two sons: | and the younger  
 of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of thy  
 substance that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his  
<sup>13</sup> living. | And not many days after the younger son gathered  
 all together, and took his journey into a far country; and  
<sup>14</sup> there he wasted his substance with riotous living. | And when  
 he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that country;  
<sup>15</sup> and he began to be in want. | And he went and joined himself  
 to one of the citizens of that country; and he sent him into  
<sup>16</sup> his fields to feed swine. | And he would fain have been filled  
 with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto  
<sup>17</sup> him. | But when he came to himself he said, How many hired

§ 172. THE PARABLE OF THE PRODIGAL SON (*continued*).

Luke xv.

servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and  
<sup>18</sup> I perish here with hunger! | I will arise and go to my father,  
 and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven,  
<sup>19</sup> and in thy sight: | I am no more worthy to be called thy  
<sup>20</sup> son: make me as one of thy hired servants. | And he arose,  
 and came to his father. But while he was yet afar off, his  
 father saw him, and was moved with compassion, and ran,  
<sup>21</sup> and fell on his neck, and kissed him. | And the son said  
 unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy  
<sup>22</sup> sight: I am no more worthy to be called thy son. | But the  
 father said to his servants, Bring forth quickly the best robe,  
 and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes  
<sup>23</sup> on his feet: | and bring the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us  
<sup>24</sup> eat, and make merry: | for this my son was dead, and is  
 alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to  
<sup>25</sup> be merry. | Now his elder son was in the field: and as he  
 came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and  
<sup>26</sup> dancing. | And he called to him one of the servants, and  
<sup>27</sup> inquired what these things might be. | And he said unto him,  
 Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted  
<sup>28</sup> calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. | But he  
 was angry, and would not go in: and his father came out,  
<sup>29</sup> and intreated him. | But he answered and said to his father,  
 Lo, these many years do I serve thee, and I never transgressed  
 a commandment of thine: and yet thou never gavest me  
<sup>30</sup> a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: | but when  
 this thy son came, which hath devoured thy living with  
<sup>31</sup> harlots, thou killedst for him the fatted calf. | And he said  
 unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that is mine is  
<sup>32</sup> thine. | But it was meet to make merry and be glad: for this  
 thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and  
 is found.

## § 173. THE PARABLE OF THE UNJUST STEWARD.

Luke xvi.

<sup>1</sup> And he said also unto the disciples, There was a certain  
 rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused  
<sup>2</sup> unto him that he was wasting his goods. | And he called him,  
 and said unto him, What is this that I hear of thee? render  
 the account of thy stewardship; for thou canst be no longer  
<sup>3</sup> steward. | And the steward said within himself, What shall  
 I do, seeing that my lord taketh away the stewardship from  
<sup>4</sup> me? I have not strength to dig; to beg I am ashamed. | I am  
 resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the steward-  
<sup>5</sup> ship, they may receive me into their houses. | And calling to  
 him each one of his lord's debtors, he said to the first, How  
<sup>6</sup> much owest thou unto my lord? | And he said, A hundred  
 measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bond,  
<sup>7</sup> and sit down quickly and write fifty. | Then said he to  
 another, And how much owest thou? And he said, A hun-  
 dred measures of wheat. He saith unto him, Take thy  
<sup>8</sup> bond, and write fourscore. | And his lord commended the  
 unrighteous steward because he had done wisely: for the  
 sons of this world are for their own generation wiser than the  
<sup>9</sup> sons of the light. | And I say unto you, Make to yourselves  
 friends by means of the mammon of unrighteousness; that,  
 when it shall fail, they may receive you into the eternal  
<sup>10</sup> tabernacles. | He that is faithful in a very little is faithful  
 also in much: and he that is unrighteous in a very little is  
<sup>11</sup> unrighteous also in much. | If therefore ye have not been  
 faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to  
<sup>12</sup> your trust the true riches? | And if ye have not been faithful  
 in that which is another's, who will give you that which is  
 your own?

## § 174. FOUR SAYINGS.

## Luke xvi.

## Matt. vi.

- A. <sup>13</sup> No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.
- B. <sup>14</sup> And the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all these things; and they scoffed at him. | And he said unto them, Ye are they that justify yourselves in the sight of men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is exalted among men is an abomination in the sight of God.
- C. <sup>16</sup> The law and the prophets were until John: from that time the gospel of the kingdom of God is preached, and every man entereth violently into it.
- D. <sup>17</sup> But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fall.

- <sup>24</sup> No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

*Matt. x i.*

- <sup>13</sup> For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John.
- <sup>12</sup> And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and men of violence take it by force.

## Matt. v.

- <sup>18</sup> For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass away from the law.

## § 175. THE PARABLE OF DIVES AND LAZARUS.

## Luke xvi.

- <sup>19</sup> Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and fine linen, faring sumptuously every day: | and a certain beggar named Lazarus was laid at his gate, full of sores, | and desiring to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table; yea, even the dogs came and licked his sores. | And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and that he was carried away by the angels into Abraham's bosom: | and the rich man also died, and was buried. | And in Hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. | And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; | for I am in anguish in this flame. | But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things: but now here he is comforted, and thou art in anguish. | And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that they which would pass from hence to you may not be able, and that none may cross over from thence to us. | And he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house; | for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. | But Abraham saith, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. | And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one go to them from the dead, they will repent. | And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, if one rise from the dead.

## § 176. ON THE TREATMENT OF OFFENCES.

## Luke xvii.

## Matt. xviii.

- <sup>3</sup> Take heed to yourselves: if thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.
- <sup>4</sup> And if he sin against thee seven times in the day, and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.
- <sup>15</sup> And if thy brother sin against thee, go, shew him his fault between thee and him alone, if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.
- <sup>21</sup> Then came Peter, and said to him, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? until seven times? }



## § 177. 'UNPROFITABLE SERVANTS.'

## Luke xvii.

<sup>7</sup> But who is there of you, having a servant plowing or keeping sheep, that will say unto him, when he is come in  
<sup>8</sup> from the field, Come straightway and sit down to meat; | and will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? | Doth  
<sup>9</sup> he thank the servant because he did the things that were commanded? | Even so ye also, when ye shall have done all the things that are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants; we have done that which it was our duty to do.

## § 178. THE TEN LEPERS.

## Luke xvii.

<sup>11</sup> And it came to pass, as they were on the way to Jerusalem, that he was passing through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. | And as he entered into a certain village, there met  
<sup>12</sup> him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: | and they lifted up their voices, saying, Jesus, Master, have mercy  
<sup>13</sup> on us. | And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and 'shew yourselves unto the priests'.<sup>a</sup> And it came to pass, as  
<sup>14</sup> they went, they were cleansed. | And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, with a loud voice  
<sup>15</sup> glorifying God; | and he fell upon his face at his feet, giving  
<sup>16</sup> him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. | And Jesus answering said, Were not the ten cleansed? but where are the nine? |  
<sup>17</sup> Were there none found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger? | And he said unto him, Arise, and go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

## § 179. 'ONE TAKEN, ANOTHER LEFT.'

## Luke xvii.

<sup>34</sup> I say unto you, In that night there shall be two men on one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. |  
<sup>35</sup> There shall be two women grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.<sup>1</sup> | And they answering say unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Where the body is, thither will the eagles also be gathered together.

## § 180. THE PARABLE OF THE JUDGE AND THE WIDOW.

## Luke xviii.

<sup>1</sup> And he spake a parable unto them to the end that they ought always to pray, and not to faint; | saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, and regarded not  
<sup>2</sup> man: | and there was a widow in that city; and she came oft unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. | And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within  
<sup>3</sup> himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; | yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest she wear me out by her continual coming. | And the Lord said,  
<sup>4</sup> Hear what the unrighteous judge saith. | And shall not God avenge his elect, which cry to him day and night, and he is  
<sup>5</sup> longsuffering over them? | I say unto you, that he will avenge them speedily. Howbeit when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

<sup>a</sup> Lev. xiii. 49.

<sup>1</sup> M. *add* 36 There shall be two men in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.



## § 181. THE PARABLE OF THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN.

Luke xviii.

<sup>9</sup> And he spake also this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and set all others at nought: | Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. | The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. | I fast twice in the week; I give tithes of all that I get. | But the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote his breast, saying, God, be merciful to me a sinner. | I say unto you, This man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; but he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

## § 182. ZACCHAEUS.

Luke xix.

<sup>1, 2</sup> And he entered and was passing through Jericho. | And behold, a man called by name Zacchaeus; and he was a chief publican, and he was rich. | And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the crowd, because he was little of stature. | And he ran on before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. | And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and said unto him, Zacchaeus, make haste, and come down; for to-day I must abide at thy house. | And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. | And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, He is gone in to lodge with a man that is a sinner. | And Zacchaeus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have wrongfully exacted aught of any man, I restore fourfold. | And Jesus said unto him, To-day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham. | For the Son of man came 'to seek' and to save 'that which was lost'.<sup>a</sup>

## § 183. THE PARABLE OF THE POUNDS.

Luke xix.

Matt. xxv.

<sup>1</sup> And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they supposed that the kingdom of God was immediately to appear. | He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. | And he called ten servants of his, and gave them ten pounds, and said unto them, Trade ye herewith till I come. | But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not that this man reign over us.

<sup>14</sup> For it is as when a man, going into another country, called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. | And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, to another one; to each according to his several ability; and he went on his journey.

<sup>16</sup> Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded with them, and made other five talents. | In like manner he also that received the two gained other two. | But he that received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

<sup>a</sup> Ezek. xxxiv. 16.

§ 183. THE PARABLE OF THE POUNDS (*continued*).

Luke xix.

- <sup>15</sup> And it came to pass,  
when he was come back again, having received the kingdom,  
that he commanded these servants,  
unto whom he had given the money,  
to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained  
by trading.
- <sup>16</sup> And the first came before him,  
saying,  
Lord, thy pound  
hath made ten pounds more.
- <sup>17</sup> And he said unto him,  
Well done, thou good servant :  
because thou wast found faithful in a very little,  
have thou authority over ten cities.
- <sup>18</sup> And the second came, saying,  
Thy pound, Lord,  
hath made five pounds.
- <sup>19</sup> And he said unto him also,

Be thou also over five cities.

- <sup>20</sup> And another came, saying, Lord,  
behold, here is thy pound,  
which I kept laid up in a napkin :
- <sup>21</sup> for I feared thee,  
because thou art an austere man :  
thou takest up that thou layedst not down,  
and reapest that thou didst not sow.
- <sup>22</sup> He saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee,  
thou wicked servant.  
Thou knewest that I am an austere man,  
taking up that I laid not down,  
and reaping that I did not sow ;
- <sup>23</sup> then wherefore gavest thou not my money into the bank,  
and I at my coming should have received  
it with interest ?
- <sup>24</sup> And he said unto them that stood by,  
Take away from him the pound,  
and give it unto him that hath the ten pounds.
- <sup>25</sup> And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.
- <sup>26</sup> I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given ;  
but from him that hath not,  
even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.
- <sup>27</sup> Howbeit these mine enemies, which would not that I should  
reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

Matt. xxv.

- <sup>19</sup> Now after a long time  
the lord of those servants cometh, }  
and maketh a reckoning with them.
- <sup>20</sup> And he that received the five talents came  
and brought other five talents, saying,  
Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents :  
lo, I have gained other five talents.
- <sup>21</sup> His lord said unto him,  
Well done, good and faithful servant :  
thou hast been faithful over a few things,  
I will set thee over many things :  
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
- <sup>22</sup> And he also that received the two talents came and said,  
Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents :  
lo, I have gained other two talents.
- <sup>23</sup> His lord said unto him,  
Well done, good and faithful servant ;  
thou hast been faithful over a few things,  
I will set thee over many things :  
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
- <sup>24a</sup> And he also that had received the one talent came and said  
Lord,  
<sup>25b</sup> and hid thy talent in the earth : }  
lo, thou hast thine own. }
- <sup>25a</sup> and I was afraid, and went away }
- <sup>24b</sup> I knew thee that thou art a hard man, }  
reaping where thou didst not sow,  
and gathering where thou didst not scatter : }
- <sup>26</sup> But his lord answered and said unto him,  
Thou wicked and slothful servant,  
thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, }  
and gather where I did not scatter ; }
- <sup>27</sup> thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the bankers  
and at my coming I should have received back  
mine own with interest.
- <sup>28</sup> Take ye away therefore the talent from him,  
and give it unto him that hath the ten talents.
- <sup>29</sup> For unto every one that hath shall be given,  
and he shall have abundance :  
but from him that hath not,  
even that which he hath shall be taken away.
- <sup>30</sup> And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer dark-  
ness : [there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.]

## § 184. THE PROMISE OF THE KINGDOM.

Luke xxii.

- <sup>28</sup> But ye are they which have continued with me in my tempta-  
<sup>29</sup> tions ; | and I appoint unto you a kingdom, even as my
- <sup>30</sup> Father appointed unto me, | that ye may eat and drink at  
my table in my kingdom ;  
and ye shall sit on thrones  
judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Matt. xix.

- <sup>28</sup> . . . Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me  
in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the  
throne of his glory,  
ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones,  
judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

## § 185. CHANGE OF METHODS.

## Luke xxii.

<sup>35</sup> And he said unto them, When I sent you forth without purse, and wallet, and shoes, lacked ye anything? And they  
<sup>36</sup> said, Nothing. | And he said unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise a wallet: and he  
<sup>37</sup> that hath none, let him sell his cloke, and buy a sword. | For I say unto you, that this which is written must be fulfilled in me, 'And he was reckoned with transgressors':<sup>a</sup> for that which  
<sup>38</sup> concerneth me hath fulfilment. | And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

## § 186. JESUS BEFORE HEROD.

## Luke xxiii.

<sup>4</sup> And Pilate said unto the chief priests and the multitudes,  
<sup>5</sup> I find no fault in this man. | But they were the more urgent, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Judaea, and beginning from Galilee even unto this place. |  
<sup>6</sup> But when Pilate heard it, he asked whether the man were  
<sup>7</sup> a Galilaean. | And when he knew that he was of Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him unto Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem in these days.  
<sup>8</sup> Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was of a long time desirous to see him, because he had heard concerning him; and he hoped to see some miracle done by  
<sup>9</sup> him. | And he questioned him in many words; but he  
<sup>10</sup> answered him nothing. | And the chief priests and the scribes  
<sup>11</sup> stood, vehemently accusing him. | And Herod with his soldiers set him at nought, and mocked him, and arraying him in  
<sup>12</sup> gorgeous apparel sent him back to Pilate. | And Herod and Pilate became friends with each other that very day: for before they were at enmity between themselves.

## § 187. THE SECOND TRIAL BEFORE PILATE.

## Luke xxiii.

[Cf. § 82.]

<sup>13</sup> And Pilate called together the chief priests and the rulers  
<sup>14</sup> and the people, and said unto them, | Ye brought unto me this man, as one that perverteth the people: and behold, I, having examined him before you, found no fault in this  
<sup>15</sup> man touching those things whereof ye accuse him: | no, nor yet Herod: for he sent him back unto us; and behold,  
<sup>16</sup> nothing worthy of death hath been done by him. | I will therefore chastise him, and release him. | But they cried out  
<sup>18</sup> all together, saying, Away with this man, and release unto  
<sup>19</sup> us Barabbas: | one who for a certain insurrection made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.

## § 188. 'DAUGHTERS OF JERUSALEM.'

## Luke xxiii.

<sup>27</sup> And there followed him a great multitude of the people, and  
<sup>28</sup> of women who bewailed and lamented him. | But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. |  
<sup>29</sup> For behold, the days are coming, in which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and  
<sup>30</sup> the breasts that never gave suck. | Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover  
<sup>31</sup> us. | For if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?  
<sup>32</sup> And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

<sup>a</sup> Isa. liiii. 12.



## § 189. THE APPEARANCE ON THE WAY TO EMMAUS.

## Luke xxiv.

<sup>13</sup> And behold, two of them were going that very day to  
 a village named Emmaus, which was threescore furlongs  
<sup>14</sup> from Jerusalem. | And they communed with each other of all  
<sup>15</sup> these things which had happened. | And it came to pass,  
 while they communed and questioned together, that Jesus  
<sup>16</sup> himself drew near, and went with them. | But their eyes  
<sup>17</sup> were holden that they should not know him. | And he said  
 unto them, What communications are these that ye have one  
 with another, as ye walk? And they stood still, looking  
<sup>18</sup> sad. | And one of them, named Cleopas, answering said unto  
 him, Dost thou alone sojourn in Jerusalem and not know  
<sup>19</sup> the things which are come to pass there in these days? | And  
 he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him,  
 The things concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet  
 mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: |  
<sup>20</sup> and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to  
<sup>21</sup> be condemned to death, and crucified him. | But we hoped  
 that it was he which should redeem Israel. Yea and beside  
 all this, it is now the third day since these things came to  
<sup>22</sup> pass. | Moreover certain women of our company amazed us,  
<sup>23</sup> having been early at the tomb; | and when they found not  
 his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision  
<sup>24</sup> of angels, which said that he was alive. | And certain of them  
 that were with us went to the tomb, and found it even so as  
<sup>25</sup> the women had said: but him they saw not. | And he said  
 unto them, O foolish men, and slow of heart to believe in all  
<sup>26</sup> that the prophets have spoken! | Behoved it not the Christ to  
<sup>27</sup> suffer these things, and to enter into his glory? | And begin-  
 ning from Moses and from all the prophets, he interpreted  
 to them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. |  
<sup>28</sup> And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they were  
<sup>29</sup> going: and he made as though he would go further. | And  
 they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward  
 evening, and the day is now far spent. And he went in to  
<sup>30</sup> abide with them. | And it came to pass, when he had sat  
 down with them to meat, he took the bread, and blessed it,  
<sup>31</sup> and brake, and gave to them. | And their eyes were opened,  
 and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. |  
<sup>32</sup> And they said one to another, Was not our heart burning  
 within us, while he spake to us in the way, while he opened  
<sup>33</sup> to us the scriptures? | And they rose up that very hour, and  
 returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together,  
<sup>34</sup> and them that were with them, | saying, The Lord is risen  
<sup>35</sup> indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. | And they rehearsed  
 the things that happened in the way, and how he was known  
 of them in the breaking of the bread.

## § 190. AN APPEARANCE TO THE APOSTLES.

## Luke xxiv.

<sup>36</sup> And as they spake these things, he himself stood in the  
 midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. |  
<sup>37</sup> But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that  
<sup>38</sup> they beheld a spirit. | And he said unto them, Why are ye  
 troubled? and wherefore do reasonings arise in your heart? |  
<sup>39</sup> See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me,  
 and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye behold  
<sup>40</sup> me having. | And when he had said this, he shewed them his  
<sup>41</sup> hands and his feet. | And while they still disbelieved for joy,  
 and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here anything  
<sup>42</sup> to eat? | And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish. |  
<sup>43</sup> And he took it, and did eat before them.



## § 191. JESUS' LAST WORDS.

Luke xxiv.

<sup>44</sup> And he said unto them, *These are my words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, how that all things must needs be fulfilled, which are written in the law of Moses, and*  
<sup>45</sup> *the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me. | Then opened he their mind, that they might understand the scriptures ; |*  
<sup>46</sup> *and he said unto them, Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day ; |*  
<sup>47</sup> *and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in*  
<sup>48</sup> *his name unto all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem. | Ye*  
<sup>49</sup> *are witnesses of these things. | And behold, I send forth the promise of my Father upon you : but tarry ye in the city, until ye be clothed with power from on high.*

## § 192. THE ASCENSION.

Luke xxiv.

<sup>50</sup> And he led them out until they were over against Bethany :  
<sup>51</sup> and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. | And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he parted from them, and was  
<sup>52</sup> carried up into heaven. | And they worshipped him, and  
<sup>53</sup> returned to Jerusalem with great joy : | and were continually in the temple, blessing God.



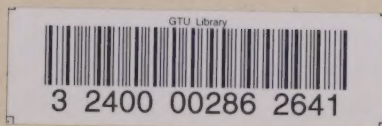












GTU Library  
2400 Ridge Road  
Berkeley, CA 94709  
For renewals call (510) 649-2500  
All items are subject to recall



